

I Must Be About My Father's Business

Volume IV

Unlimited Partnership With a Supernatural God

The Father's Business

Sword

1 John 3:8 For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

Sickle

Luke 19:10 For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.

Matthew 9:38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

James A. Twentier

I Must Be About My Father's Business Copyright © 2008
by Rev. James A. Twentier, Double Vision Evangelism, Inc.

Unless otherwise identified, Scripture quotations are from the King James Version. Scriptures included from other Bible versions are indicated as follows:

NLT - New Living Translation
TLB - The Living Bible
TEV - Today's English Version
GNT - Good News Translation
ASV - American Standard Version
NIV - New International Version
NASU - New American Standard Bible
NKJV - New King James Version
MOF - Moffat
MSG - THE MESSAGE: The Bible in Contemporary Language
© 2002 by Eugene H. Peterson. All rights reserved.

PC STUDY BIBLE from BIBLESOFT was used as the source for all Scripture references and commentaries.

Please note that the emphasis within Scripture is the author's own. The name satan and related names are not capitalized because we choose not to acknowledge him.

Contents

Dedication	9
Acknowledgments	11
Purpose and Scope	13
Author's Note.....	19
Introduction	21

I. Partnership With a Supernatural God...27

1. <i>Our Supernatural God</i>	29
1.1 God Declares His Greatness Through Creation.....	30
1.2 The Vast Universe Reflects the Size of Our God	36
1.3 The Movement and Timing of the Solar System Reflects the Perfection and Power of Our God	39
1.3.1 The Earth's Movement and Timing of One Day.....	39
1.3.2 The Earth's Movement and Timing for One Year.....	40
1.3.3 The Earth's Third Dimension of Movement.....	40
1.3.4 The Cause and Timing of the Seasons.....	42
1.3.5 The Timing of the Moon's Phases.....	43
1.3.6 How Earth Sustains Life.....	44
2. <i>Three Dimensions of a Christian</i>	47
2.1 Act Like Christ.....	48
2.2 React Like Christ.....	48
2.3 Duplicate the Ministry of Christ	51
3. <i>The Christian's Dual Nature</i>	55
3.1 Son of Man - Natural Abilities.....	57
3.2 Son of God - Supernatural Abilities.....	61
4. <i>Death of Self for Birth of the Supernatural</i>	69
4.1 Death of King Saul and Jonathan.....	70
4.2 Death of Elisha - the Double Portion Miracle.....	73
4.3 The Fading of the Outer Man.....	75

Contents

II. Restoration of Apostolic Ministry77

1. *God is the Master Architect*79

- 1.1 God's Greatest Work at Creation - Man 79
- 1.2 God's Greatest Masterpiece - the Church..... 81

2. *God is the Author of Restoration*85

- 2.1 Restoration of the Earth to the Garden of Eden State..... 85
- 2.2 Restoration of the Earth - Winter to Spring 87
- 2.3 Jubilee - The Year of Restoration 87
- 2.4 Old Testament Laws of Restoration 93

3. *Two Dimensions of Restoration*97

- 3.1 The First Dimension of Restoration..... 101
- 3.2 The Second Dimension of Restoration 108
 - 3.2.1 Following the Ark into New Territory..... 109
 - 3.2.2 Supernatural Crossing Jordan & Conquest of Canaan 111
 - 3.2.3 Obstacles Crossing Jordan at Harvest Time..... 113
 - 3.2.4 Sanctify for the Supernatural..... 114
 - 3.2.5 Deliverance from Self-imposed Chains..... 116
 - 3.2.6 Temptation to Stay in a Comfort Zone..... 118
 - 3.2.7 Encounter and Engagement Releases Supernatural
Power..... 120

4. *Restoration of the Latter Day Church*129

- 4.1 Decline and Restoration of Israel..... 129
- 4.2 Decline and Restoration of the Church..... 132

5. *Miraculous Results of Restoration*145

III. fundamentals for Growth in Our Partnership With God.....149

1. *Growing in Love for God*159

- 1.1 The Greatest Commandment 159
- 1.2 Loving God is Putting Him First 162
- 1.3 Increasing Our Love for God..... 165

Contents

2. <i>Growing in Obedience</i>.....	171
2.1 Saying “No” to Sin and Satan	176
2.2 Saying “Yes” to God and His Will	182
2.3 Humility the Foundation of Obedience	188
3. <i>Growing in Burden</i>	197
3.1 Our Burdens	197
3.2 Burden for Others.....	201
3.3 Burden of the Lord	204
4. <i>Growing in Sacrifice</i>.....	211
4.1 Sacrifice in Prayer	216
4.2 Sacrifice in Fasting.....	219
4.3 Sacrifice in Service	225
5. <i>Growing in Anointing</i>	231
5.1 Private Anointing	233
5.2 Public Anointing	235
5.3 Special Anointing (King, Prophet, Priest)	241
6. <i>Growing in Charity</i>	255
7. <i>Growing in Spiritual Gifts</i>	273
7.1 The Purpose of Miracles	273
7.2 The Supernatural Gifts	278
7.3 Other Spiritual Gifts.....	281
IV. <i>Appendices</i>.....	285
<i>Appendix 1 - Charts</i>	287
<i>Appendix 2 - Addendum Volume Chart Reference</i> ..	303
<i>Appendix 3 - Notes</i>	307
<i>Appendix 4 - About the Author</i>	311

Dedication

This book is dedicated to the men and women of the past who paid a great sacrifice in taking the less traveled path of partnership with a supernatural God -- greatly impacting their world for Jesus Christ. It is also dedicated to born-again believers who are diligently and passionately reaching for the privilege of partnering with their great God in His supernatural work.

Acknowledgments

I'd like to say a heartfelt thank you to the following people:

To my wife, Marsha Gail, thank you for 40 years of support and believing in me. Thank you for your encouragement, your abilities, and constructive suggestions in this endeavor. You are a great blessing to this project and to my life.

Joyce Houlette for assisting me with her grammatical and editing expertise.

Roland Ramos for painting the book cover scene.

Many friends who offered their support and encouragement.

Purpose and Scope

The primary aim of Volume I and Volume II is to deal with the purposes for which God created man. That includes the foundational concept that **God works only through man to accomplish His will and work on earth**. While God's purpose for creating man included **relationship**, it was much more; it was to bring man into a partnership with Himself, and give him **dominion** to carry out His mission, will, and work on earth. God's decision to make Himself dependent upon man created a balanced relationship with God needing man and man needing God. That is an exciting concept -- God needs you and me! So the two themes are:

- **Relationship** - Man's relationship with God.
- **Dominion** - God partnering with man and working through man to carry out His mission, His will, and His work on earth.

The purpose of Volumes III, IV and V is to build on the foundation of Volumes I and II, in moving toward the vision and goal of becoming a harvest-driven Christian.

Refer to the following pages for a brief description of this project.

This Project

The six volumes in this project are shown here to:

- Briefly describe the complete scope of this project.
- Define the purpose and scope of each volume and where this volume fits in this progressive series.

Volume I

God's Purpose for Man Relationship and Dominion

Volume I sets forth God's purpose for man -- relationship and dominion. It addresses in more depth man's **relationship** with God and God's desire to have a close and growing relationship with man.

It describes God and man relationship roles: Father / Child, Groom / Bride, Friend / Friend, Master / Servant (love slave).

Volume II

Dominion Doing God's Will and Work

This volume emphasizes the importance of **dominion**, since we often lead people to a relationship with God, but fail to help them take the next important step -- exercising dominion in the Kingdom of God. The two concepts of **relationship** and **dominion** working together in a believer's life will bring **balance, spiritual growth, and fulfillment**.

This book addresses the subject of **dominion** and **why** we need to be involved in the mission and work of the Father's business. It includes many examples from both the Old and New Testaments of God's plan to work through man to accomplish His will on earth.

It also describes God and man dominion roles: Great Physician /

Purpose and Scope

physician; Great High Priest / priest; Great Commander / soldier;
King of Kings / prince; Lord of the Harvest / harvester.

Volume III

Transformation

- Dominion Over Sin and Self

This book addresses **what** we need to do to become more effective in the Father's business. This encompasses **foundational principles of spiritual growth** that will prepare individuals to be more fruitful Christians. The primary emphasis is dominion over self (the will, the mind and the emotions) vs. dominion over sin.

Spiritual growth results from a hunger and a **passion** for the things of God -- "**Loving God with all of our heart, soul, and mind**". The will of God will always lead us beyond where we are now in our spiritual growth.

Spiritual growth at the individual level will result in church growth at the corporate level.

Volume IV

Unlimited Partnership With a Supernatural God

The greatest reason for God's first creation of man at the dawn of creation was that He might obtain sons to carry out His will and work on earth. He desired to reproduce His image in a creature.

The greatest reason for God's new creation of man (through a new birth, a spiritual birth) first recorded in the book of Acts, was that He might obtain **sons to carry out the supernatural work of His Kingdom**. True son-ship is an obligation to live out, or put in practice, the nature of the Father. It is the Father's will for us as sons of God, to become, "*Partakers of His divine nature*", His supernatural nature -- partnering with Him in His business.

I MUST BE ABOUT MY FATHER'S BUSINESS – Volume IV

Volume V

Revival and Evangelism

- Passion for God
- Compassion for the Lost

The key to soul winning is love and compassion while exercising **dominion** in the harvest field.

This book describes some of the biblical foundational principles of revival and evangelism. Discussed in more detail is the “**how to**” of putting the evangelism principles into practice through the two arms of the church:

- The **Prayer Ministry** -- reaching for Him.
- The **Compassion and Care Ministry** (attracting, winning and retaining) -- reaching for them.

Revival and evangelism at the personal level will result in revival and evangelism at the corporate level.

Volume VII

Addendum

PowerPoint Charts For all Volumes

The Addendum Volume contains the 8.5 X 11 copies of the PowerPoint charts supporting the themes and concepts presented in Volumes I, II, III, IV and V of the series entitled, “***I Must Be About My Father's Business***”.

The full color charts are available on CD in Adobe Acrobat and PowerPoint formats. For group teaching, these can be printed on printer transparencies for presentation on an overhead projector or with a computer and multi-media projector.

Refer to Appendices 1 and 2 for the Addendum Volume charts applicable to this book (Volume IV).

I Must Be About My Father's Business

Seven Volume Progressive Series



The message of "Perfect Love" in Volume 6 is essential for the themes in the other five volumes to work effectively. The Addendum Volume contains the 8.5 X 11 copies of the PowerPoint Charts supporting the themes presented in the above six volumes.

Author's Note

The project of writing this five volume progressive series of books is very challenging in both scope and content. This First Edition is a work in progress and is by no means a complete exposition of the subjects. It is only a summary of themes that God has dealt with me regarding these inexhaustible subjects. It is my thesis and collection of findings at this point in my Christian experience from:

- Several thousand hours studying various themes and subjects related to God's purpose and will for man, the restoration of the church, the endtime harvest, passion for God, compassion for the lost, and soul winning involving the salvation of sinner and saint alike.
- A theme that began a few years ago as a slice of bread from the Word of God, the Bread of Life. As my studies continued, it became a loaf of bread, and another, and another. As many of the things I had been studying came together, it became a bread truck, an overwhelming burden driving through my spirit, soul, and mind that had to be delivered.
- Many years of trying to apply these principles in my life and ministry. I have not attained all that I should in His work and Kingdom, but I am reaching and striving for more.
- A direction and a burden from God accompanied by an unusual urgency to very quickly complete this project. This is comparable to the burden of a message waiting to be

I MUST BE ABOUT MY FATHER'S BUSINESS – Volume IV

preached. However, this feeling has persisted throughout years of work and preparation.

This project includes much Scripture text and commentary from both the Old and New Testaments. Considered redundant to some readers, I mention it here to explain that it is intentional. These collectively demonstrate the importance of themes and concepts describing the eternal purpose and will of God for man's involvement in His work on earth.

The Word of God is like a hammer. The hammer that has worn out many anvils throughout time and without becoming weakened or diminished in its effectiveness. I pray that God will hammer these messages and themes into your spirit like He is hammering them into mine. ***Jeremiah 23:29 Is not my word like as a fire? saith the LORD; and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces?***

This book is a product of hearing several thousand messages, reading and studying the greatest Book, the Bible, and from many other sources of great writers over many years. I have tried to give proper credit to sources where appropriate. If I have overlooked someone or something, it is unintentional and only an indication that their individual message or work has blended into the larger themes of my studies and ministry.

Your comments for changes and additions to the content of this book are welcomed and will be considered for future revisions. God bless and multiply your harvest as we labor together with Him.

Introduction

Miracles are supernatural interventions in a natural world brought about by the intervention of a supernatural God. Throughout the Bible, miracles are used by God to visually represent His divine power and authority over man and nature. It is God's will to empower His followers to use miracles to authenticate His message of salvation to the lost.

Miracles are represented by four Greek words in the New Testament: *Semeion* (a "sign"), *Erga* ("works"), *Dunameis* ("mighty works"), and *Terata* ("wonders"). Since miracles transcend human ability and explanation, man cannot take credit for them. Therefore, by definition, miracles declare the presence, authority, power and glory of a supernatural God. Thirty-seven of Christ's miracles are recorded in the gospels. These miracles were signs to Israel that He was their promised Messiah.

The greatest miracle of all is salvation and the resulting gift of eternal life. However, Jesus exemplified for us miracles of healing for the physical man to authenticate His identity and to open the door for teaching spiritual truths. This is discussed further in Volume V: "Revival and Evangelism -- Compassion for the Lost".

Partnership With a Supernatural God

God has invited us to participate in His business as a partner. Apostle Paul declares in 1 Cor. 3:9:

- "We are God's coworkers." TLB
- "We are fellow workmen (joint promoters, laborers together) with and for God." AMP

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

God's decision to do nothing on earth except through man created a valid relationship and partnership of mutual need in which God would need man and man would need God.

Jesus taught His disciples to continue the work of His business when He was gone: "*Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.*" When Jesus left them, Mark gives this account of their continuing partnership with Him: "*He was received up to heaven and they went forth and preached everywhere **the Lord working with them**, and confirming the word with signs following.*"

Unlimited Partnership With God

God supplies all the resources of wisdom and power for His business, but He does not limit our participation in it. He has designed it to be an **unlimited partnership**: "*God is able to make all grace abound to you; so that ye always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound unto every good work.*"

May we never limit what God desires to do through our partnership with Him. The children of Israel, after a mighty deliverance from Egypt, greatly provoked God by limiting what He desired to do through them in possessing the Promised Land.

Ps. 78:40-41

40 How oft did they provoke him in the wilderness, and grieve him in the desert!

*41 Yea, they tempted God, and **limited the Holy One of Israel.***

-- From The Pulpit Commentary

Ver. 41 This means either "they set limits to his power in their own minds" (see ver. 20), or "they actually limited his power to help and succour them by their want of faith" (Mark 6:5, "He could there do no mighty work," explained in Matt. 13:58 to have been "because of their unbelief").¹

Where natural strength and talent fail, His power and wisdom are sufficient: *“The Lord, the Creator of all the earth, never grows faint or weary. No one can measure the depths of his understanding.”*

When God partners with us in the supernatural, He bypasses our natural talents and giftings with His power accomplishing the work. Apostle Paul refers to this: *“For this I labor, striving with all the superhuman energy which He so mightily enkindles and works within me” (Col. 1:29). AMP*

His Business Supersedes All Others

The Father’s supernatural business is unlike any other -- His business surpasses and supersedes all others because His Kingdom is on a superior plane. The Kingdom of God, of which every believer is a part, holds a place in history and importance above every other kingdom.

If we are to be effective in the Father’s supernatural business, it will be attributed to having a **passion** to be like Him in word and deed. It will be because we refuse to be satisfied with the status quo, the common and ordinary, the ritual and routine of formatted religious activities where we are in control; and we reach for the anointing (divine ability) that puts God in control.

Our pursuit of the goals for our kingdom must be superseded by a **passionate** pursuit of His Kingdom. To participate in the supernatural work of the Father’s business, it must become our **“chief joy”**, superseding all other priorities.

Our supernatural God created the magnificent and vast universe with His spoken Word. He is omnipotent, omniscient and omnipresent; nothing is impossible with Him. This incredible, loving God prepared Himself a body to suffer, bleed and die to provide a New Covenant with man. He became a Son of man so that we could become a son of God. This New Covenant of the New Testament provided a new birth experience whereby we could

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

be born again (of the water and Spirit) to have a dual nature like Jesus Christ, as son of man and son of God.

The greatest reason for God creating man was for Him to have **sons to carry out His will and work on earth**. He desired to reproduce His image in a creature. The greatest reason for God's creation of a new man, through a new birth, a spiritual birth, (first experienced on the Day of Pentecost) was that He might obtain **sons to carry out the supernatural work of His Kingdom**. True sonship is an obligation to put in practice the nature of the Father. It is the Father's will for us to become, "*Partakers of His divine nature*", partnering with Him in His business.

Growth in Our Partnership With God

The new birth experience has four sequential steps which can happen in one day:

**(1) Believing + (2) Repentance + (3) Baptism
+ (4) Receiving the Holy Ghost = The New Birth**

But spiritual growth must be viewed **as a circle, a lifetime process of repeated cycles of continuous change and growth**. As disciples of Jesus Christ, we are called to constant renewal, revival, change and growth as we assume more of the divine nature of our supernatural God.

Apostle Peter refers to this continuous transformation process of becoming a part of His divine nature -- His supernatural nature: "*Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be **partakers of the divine nature** . . . And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your **faith** virtue; and to **virtue** knowledge; And to **knowledge** temperance; and to **temperance** patience; and to **patience** godliness; And to **godliness** brotherly kindness; and to **brotherly kindness** **charity**. For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. . . Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your*

calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall” (2 Peter 1:4-10).

Some of the fundamentals for growth in our partnership with God are discussed in Section III as a **continuous growth cycle**:

- Growing in **Love for God** (foundation for everything)
- Growing in Obedience
- Growing in Burden
- Growing in Sacrifice
- Growing in Anointing
- Growing in Compassion and Charity (for those in need)
- Growing in Spiritual Gifts

This book is not intended to provide a seven step process for working with God in the supernatural. It is a summary of some of the related fundamental biblical themes that we should study and embrace to grow in a partnership with our supernatural God.

Restoration of the Church

When the church went through the Dark Ages, there was a decline in the signs, miracles and wonders formerly prevalent in the early church. But as God has restored the nation of Israel, it is His will to restore the Apostolic ministry to His church in the last days with supernatural power exceeding that of the first church recorded in the book of Acts.

We don't know how God will bring about this total restoration. However, we do know that our supernatural, all powerful God has forever exceeded Himself in doing **new things** -- things far beyond man's imagination and wisdom. God spoke of this through the prophet Isaiah: *“Forget all that I've done in the past - it is nothing compared to what I'm going to do! For I'm going to do a **brand new thing**.”* May we never limit God to what we understand or have seen Him do in the past. This is discussed in more detail in Volume V, “Revival and Evangelism”.

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

The Twenty-first Century Church Culture

Many religions and religious people today do not believe in miracles. Jesus contended with those in His day who did not believe in the supernatural: *“The Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither angel, nor spirit.”*

When the supernatural is not evident in a denomination or church for a period of time, it will either develop a doctrine that justifies its results or rely on the talents of speakers, singers and entertainers. This is a trend in the church culture of the twenty-first century that Apostle Paul warned would be one of the signs of the last days:

2 Tim. 3:5

5 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

5 For [although] they hold a form of piety (true religion), they deny and reject and are strangers to the power of it . . . AMP

- **May we embrace the miraculous work of the Spirit and hunger for the operation of the supernatural in our lives and our churches -- allowing Him to, “Do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us” (Eph. 3:30).**

Zech. 4:6

6 Not by might, nor by power, but by my Spirit, says the Lord Almighty - you will succeed because of my Spirit. TLB

Dan. 11:32

32 The people that do know their God shall be strong, and do exploits.

John 14:12

12 He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do.

I.
**Partnership With a
Supernatural God**

If our great, measureless, infinite, omnipotent, omnipresent, omniscient, supernatural God speaks of His greatness by referring to His creation of the vast and incomprehensible universe, should we not do the same? We should recognize and declare every day: "Oh Lord our Lord how excellent is thy name in all the earth -- the heavens declare your glory."

1. Our Supernatural God

We have a supernatural God. He is the source of the supernatural. The greatest of all His supernatural acts was the creation of the magnificent, vast universe. It is so large that it is measured in light years, the distance light travels in one year -- 5,869,714,000,000 miles.

Man does not know how big the universe is. As the astronomers explore with their spacecrafts, satellites and telescopes, they can only see the beginning edge of the universe. This is referred to as the “visible universe” estimated to be 14 billion light years across.

The awe and splendor of the universe has inspired artists, poets, and scientists. The universe with its stars, galaxies, and solar systems, remain a source of beauty and wonder for people of all cultures and times. The galaxies are so distant that their light may take billions of years to reach us. So when we study its unfathomable splendor, we are looking into the past and affirming that it was created by a magnificent, supernatural God. As sons of God, we should proclaim to the world the awesome greatness of our God: *“The heavens declare the glory of God -- O LORD our Lord, how excellent is thy name in all the earth.”*

This astronomical universe was created by the spoken Word of a great God, a humongous God, a supernatural God whose Spirit fills the entire universe.

1.1 God Declares His Greatness Through Creation

- **When God describes His power and His greatness, He uses one measurement -- the largest visible object -- the gigantic, humongous universe. In declaring His great power, God repeatedly proclaims in His Word that He alone created the vast, measureless heavens and heavenly bodies.**

God declares that He alone created the vastness and beauty of the universe with its galaxies, solar systems and planets. His Word states that, *“The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork.”*

- **In the first verse in the Bible, God declared that He was the creator of the universe.**

Gen. 1:1

1 In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.

He created heaven and earth with His spoken Word. It is recorded seven times in the first chapter of Genesis that, “*God said*”, and the heavens and earth were created.

And God said, Let there be light . . . And God said, Let there be a firmament . . . And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place . . . And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed . . . And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years . . . God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly . . . And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind.

- **At the time of the restoration of Jerusalem, the religious leaders, in acknowledging the greatness of God, affirmed His creation of the universe.**

Our Supernatural God

Neh. 9:5-6

5 Then the leaders of the Levites . . . called out to the people: "Stand up and praise the LORD your God, for he lives from everlasting to everlasting!" Then they continued, "Praise his glorious name! It is far greater than we can think or say."

6 You alone are the LORD. You made the skies and the heavens and all the stars. You made the earth and the seas and everything in them. You preserve and give life to everything, and all the angels of heaven worship you. NLT

- **When God spoke of His wisdom and power to Job, He spoke of His great creation.**

Job 38:4-6, 12, 19, 31-33

*4 Where were you when **I laid the foundations of the earth**? Tell me, if you know so much.*

5 Do you know how its dimensions were determined and who did the surveying?

6 What supports its foundations ,and who laid its cornerstone?

12 Have you ever commanded the morning to appear and caused the dawn to rise in the east?

19 Where does the light come from, and where does the darkness go?

*31 Can you hold back the **movements of the stars**? Are you able to restrain the Pleiades or Orion?*

*32 Can you ensure the proper **sequence of the seasons** or guide the constellation of the Bear with her cubs across the heavens?*

*33 Do you know the **laws of the universe and how God rules the earth**? NLT*

- **King David, the man after God's own heart and the great worshipper, continues the message of God's greatness that he observed through the vastness and magnificence of the creation.**

Ps. 8:3-6, 9

*3 When I consider **thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the***

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

moon and the stars, which thou hast ordained;

4 What is man, that thou art mindful of him? and the son of man, that thou visitest him?

5 For thou hast made him a little lower than the angels, and hast crowned him with glory and honour.

6 Thou madest him to have dominion over the works of thy hands; thou hast put all things under his feet:

*9 O LORD our Lord, **how excellent is thy name in all the earth!***

Ps. 19:1

*1 The **heavens declare the glory of God;** and the firmament sheweth his handywork.*

Ps. 89:11-12

*11 The heavens are thine, the earth also is thine: as for **the world and the fulness thereof, thou hast founded them.***

*12 **The north and the south thou hast created them:***

Ps. 97:6

*6 The **heavens declare his righteousness,** and all the people see his glory.*

Ps. 136:5, 7-9

*5 To him that by wisdom **made the heavens:** for his mercy endureth for ever.*

*7 To him that **made great lights:** for his mercy endureth for ever:*

*8 The **sun to rule by day:** for his mercy endureth for ever:*

*9 The **moon and stars to rule by night:** for his mercy endureth for ever.*

Ps. 148:3-5

3 Praise ye him, sun and moon: praise him, all ye stars of light.

4 Praise him, ye heavens of heavens, and ye waters that be above the heavens.

*5 Let them praise the name of the LORD: **for he commanded, and they were created.***

- **Through Isaiah God speaks of His great wisdom and power reflected in His creation.**

Isa. 40:12, 18, 21, 22, 25, 26

*12 Who hath **measured the waters in the hollow of his hand, and meted out heaven with the span, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance?***

18 To whom then will ye liken God? or what likeness will ye compare unto him?

21 Have ye not known? have ye not heard? hath it not been told you from the beginning? have ye not understood from the foundations of the earth?

*22 It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; **that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain,** and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in:*

25 To whom then will ye liken me, or shall I be equal? saith the Holy One.

*26 **Lift up your eyes on high, and behold who hath created these things, that bringeth out their host by number: he calleth them all by names by the greatness of his might, for that he is strong in power; not one faileth.***

*26 **Look up into the heavens! Who created all these stars? As a shepherd leads his sheep, calling each by its pet name, and counts them to see that none are lost or strayed, so God does with stars and planets! TLB***

Isa. 44:24

*24 Thus saith the LORD, thy redeemer, and he that formed thee from the womb, **I am the LORD that maketh all things; that stretcheth forth the heavens alone; that spreadeth abroad the earth by myself;***

Isa. 45:5-7, 18

5 I am the LORD, and there is none else, there is no God beside me:

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

6 That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me. I am the LORD, and there is none else.

7 I form the light, and create darkness: . . . I the LORD do all these things.

18 For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain, he formed it to be inhabited: I am the LORD; and there is none else.

Isa. 48:12-13

12 Listen to me, my people, my chosen ones! I alone am God. I am the First; I am the Last.

13 It was my hand that laid the foundations of the earth; the palm of my right hand spread out the heavens above; I spoke and they came into being. TLB

- **The prophet Jeremiah declared the power and wisdom of God evident in His creation of the universe.**

Jer. 10:12

12 God made the earth by His power; He established the world by His wisdom and by His understanding and skill stretched out the heavens. AMP

Jer. 32:17

17 O Sovereign Lord! You made the heavens and earth by your strong hand and powerful arm. Nothing is too hard for you! NLT

Jer. 51:15

15 He hath made the earth by his power, he hath established the world by his wisdom, and hath stretched out the heaven by his understanding.

- **Apostle John portrays Jesus Christ to be the Son of God, and that He is the creator of all things.**

Our Supernatural God

John 1:1, 3, 10

1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

3 All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.

10 He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

- **Apostle Paul states that man can know the power of the invisible God through His visible creation.**

Rom. 1:20

*20 For ever since the world was created, people have seen the earth and sky. **Through everything God made, they can clearly see his invisible qualities -- his eternal power and divine nature. So they have no excuse for not knowing God.** NLT*

Col. 1:16-18

16 For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him:

17 And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

18 And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence.

Heb. 1:10

10 And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands.

- **At the end of all things, when eternity begins, the angels will still be proclaiming the greatness of our God and that He is the creator of the universe.**

Rev. 4:11

*11 Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: **for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they***

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

are and were created.

Rev. 10:5-6

5 And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea and upon the earth lifted up his hand to heaven,

6 And sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer.

- **If our great, measureless, infinite, omnipotent, omnipresent, omniscient, supernatural God expounds His greatness by referring to His creation of the vast and incomprehensible universe, should we not do the same? We should recognize and declare every day -- *“Oh Lord, our Lord, how excellent is thy name in all the earth -- the heavens declare your glory.”***

1.2 The Vast Universe Reflects the Size of Our God

The perspective gained by observing God's glory in nature is invaluable. The immensity of God's size and power can only start to be measured in the vastness of the universe that He created. When He said, ***“Let there be light”***, light appeared and it spread across the heavens at the speed of:

- 186,000 miles per second.
- 11,000,000 per minute.
- 660,000,000 miles per hour.
- 5,869,714,000,000 miles per year (one light year).

The universe is so vast that it is measured in light years -- how far light can travel in one year. Refer to Chart F-8, “The Astronomical Size of the Universe Reflects a Supernatural God”, in Appendix 1.

- **The visible universe is 14,000,000,000 light years across. The distance light can travel in 14 billion years is 82,175,990,400,000,000,000,000 miles (82 septillion, 175 quintillion, 990 quadrillion, 400 trillion).**

The dimness of starlight when it reaches the earth is misleading, because many stars are brighter, larger, and hotter than the sun. They are located thousands of light years away and seem dimmer due to their distant proximity to earth.

The Universe

The universe is the system of stars and galaxies including everything in the sky, and it is immense beyond imagination. Really, it is impossible to grasp the great distances and numbers of heavenly bodies in the universe.

The Visible Universe Consists of:

10 Million Super-Clusters

25 Billion Galaxy Groups

350 Billion Large Galaxies

3.5 Trillion Dwarf Galaxies

30 Billion, Trillion Stars

Galaxies

A galaxy is a large independent system of stars -- typically containing millions to hundreds of billions of stars. There are four main types of galaxies: elliptical, lenticular, spiral and irregular.

The most massive galaxies are giants a million times more massive than the smallest. Their mass range is from at most some million times that of our sun in case of the smallest dwarfs, to several trillion solar masses in case of giants. The largest galaxies contain many trillions of stars.

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

Cluster of Galaxies

The term “cluster” usually refers to a large collection of thousands of galaxies and the term “group” is used for a much smaller grouping.

The Milky Way -- The Galaxy We Live In

Our galaxy alone is 100,000 light years in diameter. The Milky Way (the sub-division we live in) has been estimated to contain more than two hundred billion stars and a trillion solar masses. It is one of tens of millions of known galaxies. This galaxy is so big that one revolution of the stars in the Milky Way around its center takes about one million earth years to complete.

Solar System

A solar system is a star with its orbiting planets, moons, asteroids, comets and dust. Our solar system is the part of our galaxy (the Milky Way) that is subject to the gravity of the sun. This includes the Earth, the other planets, Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus, Neptune, and the moons that rotate around them. It is assumed that other suns have planets rotating about them, too.

The Largest Known Star

The largest known star (in terms of mass and brightness) is called the Pistol Star. It is believed to be 100 times as massive as our sun and 10,000,000 times as bright. In 1990, this star was found to lie at the center of the Pistol Nebula in the Milky Way Galaxy. In 1995, it was suggested that the Pistol Star was so massive it was throwing off the mass that actually created the Pistol Nebula. Observations from the Hubble Space Telescope in 1997 confirmed the relationship between the star and the nebula. Astronomers are unsure how a star this massive could have formed or how it will act in the future.

- **Oh Lord, our Lord, how excellent is Thy name in all the earth -- the heavens declare Your glory.**

1.3 The Movement and Timing of the Solar System Reflects the Perfection and Power of Our God

It would be too lengthy and difficult to discuss the movement and timing of the universe. Therefore, the discussion in this chapter will be limited to the movements and timings of the sun, earth and moon in our solar system.

Refer to Chart F-9, “The Perfect Timing and Movement of the Universe Reflects a Supernatural God”, in Appendix 1.

1.3.1 The Earth’s Movement and Timing of One Day

- **It is 27,000 miles around the circumference of the earth.**
- **The earth rotates at the rate of 1,100 miles per hour.**
- **The length of one day is 24 hours.**

The length of one day is always exactly 24 hours, one complete rotation of the earth. It is day when the earth faces the sun, and night when the earth faces away from the sun.

You will never hear a newscaster announce, “Warning, reset your clocks. Today will be a little longer, or a little shorter, because there has been a slight variation in the speed of the earth’s rotation.” Since the beginning of time when God set the earth in motion, the length of a day has remained constant.

God’s timing pieces for the day and night are more accurate than man’s computers and technology -- man resets his clock by God’s clock.

Gen. 1:14

14 And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years.

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

1.3.2 The Earth's Movement and Timing for One Year

- **The earth's orbit around the sun is 579,000,000 miles.**
- **The earth is hurling through space at a rate of 67,000 miles per hour.**
- **The earth completes this trip in 365.25 days -- the length of one year.**

It takes 365.25 days (one year) for the earth to go around the sun. A mind-boggling, phenomenal miracle that many never recognize, is that the timing of the earth's annual trip around the sun (579,000,000 miles at 67,000 miles per hour) has remained constant throughout the millennia of time.

1.3.3 The Earth's Third Dimension of Movement

- **The sun, along with its solar system, is traveling approximately 486,000 miles per hour through the Milky Way.**
- **The sun's path through the Milky Way is approximately 962,822,376,000,000 miles.**
- **The estimated time to complete one trip through the Milky Way is 226 million years.**

The **sun is circling** in the Milky Way Galaxy at **486,000 miles per hour**. For the earth to stay in a fixed orbit around the sun, it must move in a third dimension at the same speed -- in effect chasing the sun. It takes the sun 226 million years to complete its orbit through the Milky Way.

-- **From "Radio Astronomers Measure Sun's Orbit Around Milky Way"**

Astronomers focusing on a star at the center of the Milky Way say they have measured precisely for the first time how long it takes the sun to circle its home galaxy: 226 million years.

Using a radio telescope system that measures celestial distances 500 times more accurately than the Hubble Space

Our Supernatural God

Telescope, astronomers plotted the motion of the Milky Way and found that the sun and its family of planets (which includes the earth) were orbiting the galaxy at about 135 miles per second (486,000 mph).

That means it takes the solar system about 226 million years to orbit the Milky Way and puts the most precise value ever determined on one of the fundamental motions of the Earth and its sun, said James Moran of Harvard-Smithsonian Center for Astrophysics in Cambridge, Mass.

A report on the finding was presented Tuesday at a national meeting of the American Astronomical Society.

“Our new figure of 226 million miles is accurate to within 6 percent,” Mark Reid, a Harvard-Smithsonian astronomer and leader of the team that made the measurements, said in a statement.

The sun is one of about 100 billion stars in the Milky Way, one of billions of ordinary galaxies in the universe.

Moran said the new measurement of the solar system orbit adds new accuracy to a fundamental fact of the universe: Everything is moving constantly.

The Earth rotates on its axis at about 1,100 miles an hour, a motion that creates day and night. The Earth orbits the sun at about 67,000 miles an hour, a motion that takes one year.

The sun circles the Milky Way at a speed of about 486,000 miles per hour. And every object in the universe is moving apart from the other objects as the universe expands at a constantly accelerating rate.¹

When we consider the mind-boggling, magnificent timing and speed of the earth’s movement, hurling through space in three dimensions, we must bow low and exclaim: “*Oh Lord, our Lord, how excellent is Thy name in all the earth – the heavens declare your glory.*”

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

Summary of the Earth's Three Dimensional Movement

	Speed	Distance	Time
1.	1,100 mph Revolving on its axis	27,000 miles	24 hours (1 day)
2.	67,000 mph Revolving around the sun	570,000,000 miles	365.25 days (1 year)
3.	486,000 mph Revolving through the Milky Way	962,822,376, 000,000,000 miles	226,000,000 Years

- **Nature and creation proclaim the greatness of our God. Should not we, sons of God, do the same?**

1.3.4 The Cause and Timing of the Seasons

The primary cause of the seasons is the tilt of the earth on its axis. The earth is tilted 23.5 degrees on its axis. When the North Pole is tilted most toward the sun, the Northern Hemisphere (NH) experiences summer. June 21 is always the longest day of the year and the first day of summer. Astronomers refer to this event as the Summer Solstice.

Simultaneously, the Southern Hemisphere (SH) is tilted away from the sun causing the sun's rays to hit the region more at an angle and with less intensity. Thus comes winter in the Southern Hemisphere, the arrival of which is called the Winter Solstice.

As the earth continues along its path around the sun, its angle constantly shifts the North Pole away from the sun and the South Pole toward the sun. On **December 21**, the Winter Solstice in the

NH, the earth's North Pole is tilted farthest from the sun while the South Pole is pointed the closest to the sun. This **shortest day of the year** is the first day of winter.

On March 20 or 21 of each year, the earth reaches the vernal equinox marking the arrival of spring in the NH and fall in the SH. The autumnal equinox occurs on September 22-23 signaling the arrival of fall in the NH and spring in the SH.

God's timing for the seasons is constant and accurate -- summer, fall, winter, and spring.

Gen. 8:22

*22 While the earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and **cold** and **heat**, and **summer** and **winter**, and day and night shall not cease.*

Ps. 74:16-17

16 The day is thine, the night also is thine: thou hast prepared the light and the sun.

*17 Thou hast set all the borders of the earth: thou hast made **summer** and **winter**.*

1.3.5 The Timing of the Moon's Phases

The moon rotates around the earth every 27.3 days and makes one revolution on its axis in the same number of days. Earth-bound observers can never see the "far-side" of the moon. This is because the same side of the moon always faces the earth. In other words, it takes the moon the same amount of time to rotate around once as it does for the moon to go around the earth once.

The phases of the moon are the full moon, waning gibbous, third quarter, waning crescent, new moon, waxing crescent, first quarter, waxing gibbous, and full moon. The timing of the phases of the moon is so accurate it can be placed on a calendar.

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

1.3.6 How Earth Sustains Life

For earth to maintain its average temperature of 61°F (16.1°C), it requires a very delicate balance within its atmosphere, oceans and solid earth. Consider the planet Mercury, which is the planet closest to the Sun at a distance of 36 million miles, its temperatures range from minus 280°F to plus 800°F, depending on whether its surface is facing the Sun. Venus, the second closest planet to the Sun at a mere distance of 67 million miles, maintains an average surface temperature of about 882°F regardless which segment is facing the Sun. Neither planet is able to sustain life as we know it on Earth, nor can any other planet in our solar system.

Earth's Checks and Balances

Earth has a built-in, naturally-occurring “force field” around it that creates viable living conditions for plant and animal inhabitants. The atmosphere contains greenhouse gases like carbon dioxide to keep the earth warm, and an ozone layer to protect the earth from harmful and incinerating radiation.

The earth's other checks and balances help it absorb and retain the sun's heat and energy (such as the oceans) while reflecting its energy back into space (such as the polar ice caps). Wind and ocean currents also distribute this heat around the globe, all within the earth's protective atmosphere.

The earth is unique in its ability to create and maintain sustainable living conditions because all of its systems and influences are miraculously connected.

Conclusion

God made a universe with unknown limits. Our vast universe is so big the human mind cannot grasp it. The earth's size compared to the dimensions of its galaxy, the Milky Way, is like a quarter compared to North America, as is the Milky Way equally proportionate to the universe.

Our Supernatural God

When observing creation, we realize there is an awesome, incredible, indescribable, majestic, measureless, supernatural God who brought all this into existence with just His spoken Word.

Isa. 66:1

*1 Thus saith the LORD, The **heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool**: where is the house that ye build unto me? and where is the place of my rest?*

- **The creation reveals an awesome God so enormous that the universe cannot hold Him. But as incomprehensible as our universe, our God is 99,999,999,999, 999,999 times bigger -- and more.**

This great and measureless God came to a tiny speck in the universe called the Milky Way and on to a minute speck in the Milky Way called Earth -- to bleed and die for man. God is so very intricate and caring that He comes down to our level, speaks to us individually, and involves Himself in our affairs. He came to dwell in us and to love us unconditionally, despite knowing our weaknesses and failures.

God deals with us at the individual level, ministering to our needs, and conversely He controls the vast universe:

Ps. 147:3-4

*3 He **healeth the broken in heart, and bindeth up their wounds.**
4 He **telleth the number of the stars; he calleth them all by their names.***

Ps. 139:5-6

*5 Thou hast beset me behind and before, and laid thine hand upon me.
6 Such knowledge is too wonderful for me; it is high, I cannot attain unto it.*

With six billion people on earth, each of us is like a grain of sand on the seashores. But our incredibly huge God became a Son of man so we could become sons of God. It is His will for His sons,

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

to partake of His divine, supernatural nature and partner with Him in His business affairs on earth.

- **With this incredible knowledge and privilege, we should commit to become more devoted to our loving heavenly Father and more involved in, “The Father’s Business”.**
- **The human vocabulary is inadequate to describe our supernatural God. But may we all seek to understand His greatness and how to better exalt Him with our worship and praise.**

Our God is magnificent!

He is infinite! He is eternal! He is awesome!

He is wonderful! He is incredible! He is omniscient!

He is omnipotent! He is omnipresent! He is limitless!

He is measureless! He is indescribable! He is incomparable!

He is incomprehensible! He is infinite! He is supernatural!

- **Oh Lord our Lord, how excellent is Thy name in all the earth! The heavens declare Your glory!**

2. *Three Dimensions of a Christian*

The highest calling in life is to be a Christian. No goal is more worthy, no desire more satisfying than to be a Christian -- a disciple of Jesus Christ. If we are Christians, we will be good citizens, employees, companions, fathers, mothers, neighbors, and workers in the Father's business.

Acts 11:26

26 . . . The disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.

A Christian is a follower of Christ, His disciple -- one who is Christ-like. To be Christ-like is to act like Christ: to love what He loves, to hate what He hates and to emulate what He exemplified for us in His earthly ministry.

To be a Christian -- what does this really entail? To experience the depth that Jesus Christ intended for the born-again believer encompasses three levels -- three dimensions:

1. **Act like Christ** -- to carry our cross.
2. **React like Christ** -- to be crucified with Him -- dying to the carnal man.
3. **Duplicate the ministry of Christ** -- following in the footsteps of His miracle ministry.

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

2.1 Act Like Christ

To act like Christ is to have Christ-like attributes: loving, compassionate, forgiving, merciful, gracious, joyful, peaceful, pure, sacrificing, long-suffering, humble, gentle and meek actions.

The list of Christ-like attributes is endless but includes that which is wholesome and unselfish in dealing with our fellow man. This means walking like Christ in holiness and keeping ourselves undefiled from sins while encouraging those who are hurting and wounded.

To act like Christ is to be His disciple, embracing His teaching. To be a disciple of Jesus Christ, we must take up our cross and follow Him. Jesus said, *“Whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.”*

2.2 React Like Christ

This dimension of Christian living is more difficult because it is reacting rightly when we are mistreated, abused or falsely accused. It is having the right reaction when people (family, friends or enemies) attack us and we experience the meaning of being crucified with Him. Jesus knew this would be a difficult test for His followers so He left us instruction.

Matt. 5:44-47

*44 But I say unto you, **Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;***

45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.

46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same?

47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so?

Three Dimensions of a Christian

Luke 6:32-36

32 If you love only the people who love you, why should you receive a blessing? Even sinners love those who love them!

33 And if you do good only to those who do good to you, why should you receive a blessing? Even sinners do that!

34 And if you lend only to those from whom you hope to get it back, why should you receive a blessing? Even sinners lend to sinners, to get back the same amount!

*35 No! **Love your enemies and do good to them; lend and expect nothing back.** You will then have a great reward, and you will be children of the Most High God. For he is good to the ungrateful and the wicked.*

*36 **Be merciful** just as your Father is merciful. GNT*

- **Many people are willing to carry their cross, but fewer are willing to be nailed to it. While we cannot nail ourselves to the cross, a brother can. Sometimes the test is to determine whether the spirit of offense lies dormant in our heart.**

When someone treats us wrong, consider:

- It is not about us and them -- it is about us and Him.
- God may be testing our spirit to see whether the carnal man is dead.
- It is God's will for people to hurt us because only the Refiner's fire will reveal a dormant spirit of offense.

We need to live near the cross, to be reminded of Christ's example for those aspiring to be like Him in His loving reaction to:

- False accusations and physical abuse at His trial.
- Inhumane beating by the cruel Roman soldiers.
- Indescribable pain inflicted at His crucifixion and His subsequent painful death.

The source of Jesus' suffering was the religious leaders who should have been His greatest supporters. When the source of our opposition comes from family or friends, we can review the

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

example of Jesus' suffering foretold by Isaiah hundreds of years before the event: "*He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth.*"

Zech. 13:9

9 And I will bring the third part through the fire, and will refine them as silver is refined, and will try them as gold is tried: they shall call on my name, and I will hear them: I will say, it is my people: and they shall say, the Lord is my God.

Gal. 5:24

24 And those who belong to Christ Jesus (the Messiah) have crucified the flesh (the godless human nature) with its passions and appetites and desires. AMP

It is God's will for us to be crucified with Him. The **carnal man** must die and become **dormant** in our life, so that **His Spirit** can rule and be **dominant**.

- **The symbol of Christianity is the cross, so we should expect suffering in our Christian walk.**

Apostle **Paul** addressed being **crucified with Christ**.

Gal. 2:20

20 I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

1 Cor. 15:31

31 . . . I die daily.

Paul, why so many references about being crucified with Him and dying daily? Paul clearly illustrates this point. He was dying not

to sin, but to self. He taught that to **duplicate the ministry of Jesus**, he must have resurrection power only available through death of the carnal man.

Rom. 6:5

*5 For if we have been **planted together in the likeness of his death**, we shall be also in the **likeness of his resurrection**.*

Phil. 3:10

*10 That I may know him, and the **power of his resurrection**, and the **fellowship of his sufferings**, being made conformable unto his death.*

Resurrection power comes through being crucified with Him, not just carrying our cross.

2.3 Duplicate the Ministry of Christ

Jesus (God in human flesh) walked on this earth for 33.5 years and performed His miracle ministry for 3.5 years. It is His will for us to follow in His footsteps of miracle ministry and to do even greater works.

John 14:12

*12 He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and **greater works than these shall he do**; because I go unto my father.*

1 Peter 2:21

*21 For God called you to do good, even if it means suffering, just as Christ suffered for you. He is your example, and you must **follow in his steps**. NLT*

Jesus died before His mission was completed -- crucified in the prime of His life. Isaiah foretold this event:

Isa. 53:8

*8 He was **cut off out of the land of the living**; for the transgression of my people was he stricken. And **who shall***

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

declare his generation?

What is our answer and response to Isaiah's question? ***“Who shall declare his generation?”*** Who will keep telling His story?

Jesus left us with a clear message that He had merely begun a mission that He wanted us to complete. His only recorded prayer request was that laborers would continue to work in the Father's business:

Matt. 9:37-38

37 Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few;

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

John 4:35

35 Say not ye, There are yet four months, and then cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest.

The only way to duplicate the ministry of Jesus is through the unique sonship of Jesus Christ. What was different about Him? **In His dual nature**, He was both Son of God and Son of man. When we are born again (born of the Spirit), we will have a dual nature as son of God and son of man. As a son of God, we have the power of attorney to carry on the ministry of the Son of God. (This will be described in more detail in the next chapter: “The Christian's Dual Nature.”)

There are no references to the term **“Son of God”** in the Old Testament because the Son of God was not eternal. The only begotten Son was not revealed until Bethlehem:

Gal. 4:4-7

4 But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his son, made of a woman, made under the law,

5 To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive

Three Dimensions of a Christian

the adoption of sons.

6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the spirit of his son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

*7 Wherefore thou art **no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.***

There are 47 references to “**Son of God**” in the New Testament -- Jesus Christ. There are six references to “sons of God” in the New Testament. That is us -- born-again Christians.

John 1:12

*12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the **sons of God**, even to them that believe on his name:*

Rom. 8:14, 16, 17

*14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the **sons of God**.*

*16 The spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that **we are the children of God**:*

*17 And if **children, then heirs; of God, and with Christ**; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.*

As sons of God we are heirs of salvation, eternal life, and blessings of provision for our needs. An heir inherits the wealth and assets of the father. **But he also inherits the father’s business to carry on.** It is God’s will for us to inherit His business, as well as His benefits.

Jesus, at the early age of 12, said, “***I must be about my Father’s business.***” When we comprehend who we are as sons of God, we understand that we have power of attorney to carry on His business:

- Duplicating the ministry that He exemplified for us on earth.
- Completing **His mission as a son of God.**

The only purpose of the church, and our only purpose for being a son of God, is to complete His mission. Like a son who inherits and operates his father’s business correctly in the natural world, the public should not sense a change in service.

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

When a father has built a great business, he expects it to be carried on the same way he did. He will be the most fulfilled when his son achieves the same (or better) results using the practices that he established.

In His death at Calvary, Jesus took our place. He wants us to take His place in this world to complete His mission -- to be about the Father's business, to duplicate His ministry.

Because the disciples stepped into His footsteps and began to duplicate His ministry, the world did not notice anything less than what Jesus had performed. The book of Acts was a continuation of Jesus' miracle ministry in the gospels -- Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John.

In the first recorded miracle after the ascension of Jesus Christ, it made no difference to the cripple man at the temple gate if it was Jesus or Peter who ministered to him -- the result was the same.

Acts 3:6-8

6 Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk.

7 And he took him by the right hand, and lifted him up: and immediately his feet and ankle bones received strength.

8 And he leaping up stood, and walked, and entered with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God.

The book of Acts has no "amen", no end, unlike most other New Testament books. It was not meant to end; it was meant to continue and be repeated over and over again -- by Christians completing the ministry of Jesus Christ.

3. *The Christian's Dual Nature*

God's plan from the beginning, after the fall of Adam, was to become part of the human race to redeem man.

Heb. 2:16-18

16 For verily he took not on him the nature of angels; but he took on him the seed of Abraham.

17 So it is evident that it was essential that He be made like His brethren in every respect, in order that He might become a merciful (sympathetic) and faithful High Priest in the things related to God, to make atonement and propitiation for the people's sins.

18 For because He Himself [in His humanity] has suffered in being tempted (tested and tried), He is able [immediately] to run to the cry of (assist, relieve) those who are being tempted and tested and tried [and who therefore are being exposed to suffering]. AMP

Isa. 9:6

*6 For unto us a **child is born [humanity]**, unto us a **son is given [humanity]**; and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and **his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The mighty God [deity], The everlasting Father [deity], The Prince of Peace [deity]**.*

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

- **The unique thing about Jesus Christ was that He had a dual nature. He was both God and man -- the Son of God and the Son of man.**

His humanity came from His mother (Son of man); His deity was from His Father (Son of God). He could touch both worlds because He was a part of both. **He was both Son of God and Son of man.**

Because we could not go where He was, He came to us. He became a Son of man for us to become sons of God. He assumed the nature of man so that we could receive the nature of God.

It is God's plan for man to be born again -- born of the Spirit to become a son of God.

John 3:5-7

5 Jesus answered, verily, verily, I say unto thee, except a man be born of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God [two kingdoms].

*6 That which is born of the flesh is **flesh** [son of man]; and that which is born of the spirit is **spirit** [son of God -- two sons].*

7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, ye must be born again.

If we're born once, we die twice; but if we're born twice, we only die once. The first death is a natural one; the second death is spiritual (eternal death).

We must experience the second birth to become a son of God. Our **first birth** ushered us into this world; we became citizens of the country. But the **second birth** made us citizens of heaven and will transport us to a better world.

In 1942, I was born into the Twentier family (son of man), but in 1957 I was born again of the water and Spirit into the family of God (son of God).

When we are born again, we receive a dual nature like Jesus -- son of man and son of God. It is God's will for born-again Christians

to use this dual nature to reconcile the lost to Him. To complete the mission of Jesus through duplicating His ministry, we must function as a son of man in our kingdom and as a son of God in His Kingdom.

Every born-again believer is a son of God and possesses a dual nature like Jesus Christ. May we as followers of Christ experience a greater revelation of what it means to be partakers of His divine nature for the purpose of carrying on the Father's business.

3.1 Son of Man - Natural Abilities

The natural man (son of man) is comprised of three parts -- body, soul and spirit. This was discussed in detail in Volume III.

Body

The body is the physical structure having bone, fiber of flesh and sinew, and vital organs: brain, heart, lungs, kidneys, liver, etc. **With its five senses of sight, hearing, taste, smell and touch, the body connects us with the earth and makes us world conscious.**

Soul

The soul is made up of the **will**, the **mind** and the **emotions** and makes us **self-conscious**.

It is the soul that gives the body its use. In the Latin, it is rendered "anima" -- that which animates the body. The soul, then gives life to the physical body (intellect to the brain, emotions to the heart, etc.).

Our soul is the real us, who we are, our individuality, personality, influence, intellect, **natural talents**, and **abilities**.

Spirit

The spirit of man comprises **conscience**, **communion** and **intuition** and makes us **God conscious**:

- Conscience is the discerning entity distinguishing right from wrong.

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

- Communion - The soul is incapable of communing with God, because He is not apprehended by our thoughts, feelings or intentions. God can only be known directly in our spirits.
- Intuition senses independently of any outside influence or knowledge (what we see, hear or learn, etc.).

Son of Man Used by God

We must not confuse the “carnal nature” and the “spiritual man” with the concepts of son of man and son of God. The carnal man will always be in battle with the spiritual man; carnality must repeatedly be subdued and crucified. Refer to Chart F-3, “The Path to the Supernatural -- He Must Increase but I Must Decrease”, in Appendix 1.

Apostle Paul refers to the carnal nature, the Adamic nature, in his writings:

Rom. 8:6-8

6 For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.

7 Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

We must subdue the carnal man to enable the spiritual man to rule in our lives. But it is God’s will for Christians to use their roles as sons of man to build a bridge to their lost world.

- **Apostle Paul was a bridge builder. As a son of man, he built relationships with people on common ground to win them to Christ.**

1 Cor. 9:20-23

20 When I am with the Jews, I become one of them so that I can bring them to Christ. When I am with those who follow the Jewish laws, I do the same, even though I am not subject to the law, so that I can bring them to Christ.

21 When I am with the Gentiles who do not have the Jewish law, I fit in with them as much as I can. In this way, I gain their confidence and bring them to Christ. But I do not discard the law of God; I obey the law of Christ.

*22 When I am with those who are oppressed, I share their oppression so that I might bring them to Christ. Yes, **I try to find common ground with everyone so that I might bring them to Christ.***

23 I do all this to spread the Good News, and in doing so I enjoy its blessings. NLT

-- From Adam Clarke's Commentary

1 Cor. 9:22 [I am made all things to all men] I assumed every shape and form consistent with innocency and perfect integrity; giving up my own will, my own way, my own case, my own pleasure, and my own profit, that I might save the souls of all. Let those who plead for the system of accommodation on the example of Paul, attend to the end he had in view, and the manner in which he pursued that end. It was not to get money, influence, or honour, but to save SOULS! It was not to get ease but to increase his labours. It was not to save his life, but rather that it should be a sacrifice for the good of immortal souls!¹

-- From Matthew Henry's Commentary

1 Cor. 9:22 In short, he became all things to all men, that he might by all means (all lawful means) gain some. He would not sin against God to save the soul of his neighbor, but he would very cheerfully and readily deny himself. The rights of God he could not give up, but he might resign his own, and he very often did so for the good of others.²

It is God's plan for us to follow in His footsteps to reach His lost world:

1. As **sons of God**, building a relationship with God with our spirit connecting to His Spirit.

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

2. As **sons of man**, building a relationship with sinners. In this role Jesus sat down to eat with sinners. This is an example of what we can do with kind deeds in reaching to man.
3. As **sons of God**, reaching to fallen man and reaching to our great God using the ministry of reconciliation to bring the lost to Him.

Refer to the following charts in Appendix 1:

Chart G-23 Ministering to Natural Needs and Spiritual Needs

Chart G-24 The Soul Winning and Spiritual Maturity Cycle

Natural Talents and Giftings

The natural talents and giftings of Christians may be anointed and used of God. It is God's will to anoint and use us in His Kingdom as a son of man.

Our natural talents can be dedicated to the world or dedicated to God. When we allow God to anoint our abilities, His name and Kingdom are glorified. He allows us to enjoy using these talents and giftings in our service to Him. **But it is God's will to use us beyond our natural abilities -- with His supernatural ability.**

After using natural talents and giftings for His glory, it is God's will for:

- Talented singers to step out of their singing roles,
- Accomplished musicians to lay aside their musical instruments,
- Gifted actors to step out of their drama roles,

and into their calling as a **son of God**, directly touching people in need, with God's supernatural power doing the work. Refer to Chart F-1, "The Path to the Supernatural Through the Core Ministry of the Church", in Appendix 1.

Nowhere in Scripture do we find God using man's natural giftings and talents to perform His supernatural work. When God used David, Gideon, Esther, Samson, Moses, the four lepers and many

others, He chose the most unqualified for the task; He wanted to demonstrate it was He alone who did the work. It was, and is, His will that His name would be exalted and He would receive all the glory.

God's message to Zerubbabel was: "*Not by might, nor by power, but **by my Spirit**, says the Lord Almighty -- **you will succeed because of my Spirit**, though you are few and weak*" (Zech. 4:6).
TLB

Jesus, speaking as Son of man, declared it was not His abilities that did the supernatural works, but the Father that dwelt in Him.

John 14:10

*10 Do you not believe that I am in the Father, and that the Father is in Me? What I am telling you I do not say on My own authority and of My own accord; but **the Father who lives continually in Me does the (His) works** (His own miracles, deeds of power). AMP*

3.2 Son of God - Supernatural Abilities

The greatest reason for God's creation of man was for Him to have sons. He desired to reproduce His image in man. It was not only to be a moral resemblance in character but a channel through which He could flow His supernatural power to accomplish His work on earth. He desired His sons to become, "*Partakers of His divine nature*" -- His supernatural nature.

Rev. Jeff Arnold states: "**It is totally abnormal for a born-again New Testament Christian not to possess an appetite for the supernatural. It is not right, it is not normal, because you have God's DNA inside of you. You have His divine nature in you. He is a miracle looking to happen through you.**"

2 Peter 1:4

*4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: That by these ye might be partakers of **his divine nature**.*

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

2 Cor. 3:18

*18 But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are **changed into the same image from glory to glory**, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.*

Col. 3:10

*10 You are living a **brand new kind of life** that is continually learning more and more of what is right, and **trying constantly to be more and more like Christ who created this new life within you.** TLB*

Eph. 1:4-5

*4 Even as [in His love] He chose us [actually picked us out for Himself as His own] in Christ before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy (consecrated and **set apart for Him**) and blameless in His sight, even above reproach, before Him in love.
5 For He foreordained us (destined us, planned in love for us) to be **adopted as His own children** through Jesus Christ, **in accordance with the purpose of His will.** AMP*

John 1:12-13

*12 But as many as received him, to them gave he **power to become the sons of God**, even to them that believe on his name:
13 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.*

Sonship

True sonship implies identity of character between father and son. Therefore, the Bible frequently uses the expression, “to be a son” in the sense of “to be similar, to bear the characteristics of one’s father.”

Sometimes the word “son” is used where a literal relationship of father and son did not exist. Jesus described the “*sons of the devil*” (John 8:33-44). He meant the men whose nature and manner of life is satanic. Jesus described the Pharisees as “*sons of those who killed the prophets*” (Matt. 23:31). Jesus also cited the “*sons of the*

resurrection” (Luke 20:36), meaning those redeemed with His resurrection power.

In this context, to be a son means being like his father. Therefore, we understand that sonship is inseparably linked with the true image of God. Son of God and image of God belong together. True sonship is an obligation to put in practice the love and holiness of our heavenly Father. In the Sermon on the Mount, Jesus said: *“Love your enemies, and pray for them that persecute you; **that ye may be sons of your Father** which is in heaven” (Matt. 5:44-45).*

Rom. 8:28-31

28 We are assured and know that all things work together and are [fitting into a plan] for good to and for those who love God and are called according to [His] design and purpose.

*29 For those whom He foreknew [of whom He was aware and loved beforehand], He also destined from the beginning [foreordaining them] **to be molded into the image of His Son [and share inwardly His likeness]**, that He might become the firstborn among many brethren.*

*30 And those whom He thus **foreordained**, He also **called**; and those whom He called, He also **justified** (acquitted, made righteous, putting them into right standing with Himself). And those whom He justified, He also **glorified** [raising them to a heavenly dignity and condition or state of being].*

31 What then shall we say to [all] this? If God is for us, who [can be] against us? [Who can be our foe, if God is on our side?] AMP

- **When God partners with man in the supernatural, He bypasses man's natural abilities and giftings. His Spirit resident in a believer, as a son of God, accomplishes the supernatural work.**

Jesus Christ, speaking as son of man, declares that it is not he that does the miraculous works, but the eternal Spirit of God dwelling in Him:

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

John 14:10

*10 Don't you believe that I am in the Father and the Father is in me? The words I speak are not my own, but **my Father who lives in me does his work through me.** NLT*

10 . . . The Father who lives continually in Me does the (His) works (His own miracles, deeds of power). AMP

Apostle Paul speaks of this same concept regarding us as sons of God: “*For it is **God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure.***” (Phil. 2:13)

Refer to the following charts in Appendix 1:

Chart F-1 The Path to the Supernatural Through the Core Ministry of the Church

Chart F-7 What Hinders the Supernatural -- Flow to Vs. Flow Through

Our first birth was a natural one to natural parents. But to be like Jesus, to be Christ-like -- we must be born again (of the water and Spirit). This gives us a dual nature like His. We are His sons and have the authority and power of His Name, His Word, and His Spirit to replicate His ministry.

Baptism in Jesus name puts us in Christ, but baptism in the Holy Ghost puts Christ in us; we are in Christ and Christ is in us. The second birth made us sons of God, heirs and joint heirs of Jesus Christ and His Kingdom -- heirs of:

- Not only the riches of Christ, eternal life and the inheritance of sons,
- But heirs of His mission and heirs of His business -- the business of seeking and saving the lost.

He has given us the power of attorney to carry on His business, and as sons of God we should be:

- Reaching for the impossible in His Kingdom vs. the possible in our kingdom.

The Christian's Dual Nature

- Believing the inconceivable in His Kingdom vs. the conceivable in our kingdom.
- Hearing the inaudible voice of the Spirit in His Kingdom vs. the audible in our kingdom.
- Seeing the invisible in His Kingdom vs. the visible in our kingdom.
- Seeing a vision of what God wants to do through our lives and through His church.
- **Being born again of the water and Spirit ushers us into the Kingdom and family of God, granting us rights and privileges as sons of God.**

I am a son of God, He is my Father. I can become like Him because I have been born again of the Spirit and am a partaker of His divine nature. I may be insignificant in this world, but in His Kingdom, I am a son of God, a child of the King.

It is appropriate to rejoice in who God is -- He is incredible, measureless, and supernatural -- there is none like Him. But a major weapon that Satan uses is to blind us from understanding our rights as sons of God. When we finally understand this, we will concur with Paul, *"I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me."*

As a son of man, we are subject to the attacks, strategies and power of the devil. But with our Father's name and authority, the devil is subject to us. Jesus said in *Luke 10:19*: *"I have given you authority over all the power of the Enemy."* TLB

Our dual nature enables us to participate in Jesus' mission and ministry:

1. Building a father/son relationship with Him.
2. Establishing a relationship with man (someone in need), as **sons of man** -- like Jesus, ministering to their physical needs.
3. Continuing the ministry of reconciliation as **sons of God**, like Jesus, with dominion over Satan and sickness.

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

2 Cor. 5:18-20

*18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath **given to us the ministry of reconciliation**; (restoration to divine favor)*

19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

*20 Now then **we are ambassadors for Christ**, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.*

When we receive the gift of the Holy Ghost, it is the same Spirit (not similar). The Spirit of God is everywhere. The Holy Ghost is a portion of His Spirit packaged to fit in our spirit -- like a glass of water from the ocean. But it has enough power to repeat and exceed the works that Jesus exemplified for us during His short ministry:

John 14:12

*12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and **greater works than these shall he do**; because I go unto my Father.*

Phil. 2:15

*15 That ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God, without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ye **shine as lights in the world**.*

The Problem:

- **Insurmountable problems and issues of our generation that has been affected by sin, sickness, abuse and the absence of godly influence and guidance from the prior generation.**
- **Very little time just before the second coming of Jesus.**

The Only Solution:

- **The supernatural power of God, working in every born-again believer, with authority over satan and sickness, confirming the Word of God with signs following.**

Mark 16:17, 18, 20

*17 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they **cast out devils**;*

*18 . . . they shall **lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.***

*20 And they went forth, and preached everywhere, **the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following.***

If we are to move deeper into the power of the supernatural it cannot be church and religion as usual. It cannot be routine formatted religious behavior. There must be a fading of the outer man and a shining forth of the radiance of God's beauty and supernatural power through the inner man.

*"According to his working, which worketh in me mightily."
(Colossians 1:29)*

4. Death of Self for Birth of the Supernatural

As discussed in the prior chapter, we are comprised of two parts: the natural man (body, soul) and the spiritual man (spirit). Only one can rule on the throne of man's life. Either the natural man will rule or the indwelling Spirit of God will rule.

When we consider what hinders the supernatural and the great endtime harvest, we must look inwardly and examine ourselves. No other factor, other than self, is responsible. **It is not:**

- **God** - because He has promised that He will do His part, as we do ours.
- **Satan** - because he is already defeated by the spiritual man and is unable stop the plan of God.
- **Time** - we should not be waiting on some prophetic event to engage in the harvest -- it is the endtime -- it is harvest time.
- **Lack of souls who need salvation** - because only a small percentage of mankind has experienced the saving power of Jesus Christ.

Simply, it is that there has not been a complete and total death of the natural man (a rending of the veil of self) allowing the Spirit to

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

completely rule in our lives. Refer to Chart F-7, “What Hinders the Supernatural -- Flow to Vs. Flow Through”, in Appendix 1.

Apostle Paul experienced the death of the carnal man (*I die daily*) the life of the spiritual man, and the resulting intense evangelism and miracles that shook and changed his world for the Kingdom of Jesus Christ.

2 Cor. 4:10

10 Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body.

4.1 Death of King Saul and Jonathan

Saul was the first king of Israel. He started out well, but as he became confident in his own abilities, he became rebellious, failing to follow the Word of the Lord.

The young shepherd boy, David, achieved fame in his victory over the giant Goliath. God chose David to become king to replace King Saul.

Jonathan was the son of King Saul and heir to his father’s monarchy.

1 Sam. 17:57; 18:1, 3

57 And as David returned from the slaughter of the Philistine, Abner took him, and brought him before Saul with the head of the Philistine in his hand.

*1 And it came to pass, when he had made an end of speaking unto Saul, **that the soul of Jonathan was knit with the soul of David,** and Jonathan loved him as his own soul.*

3 Then Jonathan and David made a covenant, because he loved him as his own soul.

King Saul is a type of the **flesh**. He was handsome and tall, and appealing to the people. But he could never completely obey the Word of God.

Death of Self for Birth of the Supernatural

Jonathan is a type of the **soul**. He was born of Saul (flesh), but knit to David as the soul is attached to the spirit. He and David became best of friends.

David is a type of the **spirit**. He was a great worshipper of God as shown in his many Psalms. He was a man after God's own heart because he did all the will of God.

Both King Saul and Jonathan were willing for David to fight the difficult battles they could not win.

1 Sam. 19:8

8 And there was war again: and David went out, and fought with the Philistines, and slew them with a great slaughter; and they fled from him.

As King Saul continued his downward spiral away from God, an evil spirit came upon him and he sought to kill David.

1 Sam. 19:1, 9, 10

1 And Saul spake to Jonathan his son, and to all his servants, that they should kill David.

9 And the evil spirit from the Lord was upon Saul, as he sat in his house with his javelin in his hand: and David played with his hand.

10 And Saul sought to smite David even to the wall with the javelin; but he slipped away out of Saul's presence, and he smote the javelin into the wall: and David fled, and escaped that night.

When Jonathan appealed to King Saul for David, Saul tried to kill him.

1 Sam. 20:32-33

32 And Jonathan answered Saul his father, and said unto him, Wherefore shall he be slain? what hath he done?

33 And Saul cast a javelin at him to smite him: whereby Jonathan knew that it was determined of his father to slay David.

King Saul told his son Jonathan that David prevented him from attaining the throne and becoming king.

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

1 Sam. 20:31

31 For as long as the son of Jesse liveth upon the ground, thou shalt not be established, nor thy kingdom. Wherefore now send and fetch him unto me, for he shall surely die.

Saul Deserved to Die -- But Why Did Jonathan Have to Die?

The story of David and Jonathan is a love story of best friends. Jonathan was a wonderful and gracious man -- deserving his rightful ascension to the throne. But Jonathan's death is a sad story of lost potential and premature death.

Why did Jonathan have to die? As long as he lived, he was the rightful heir. David would never assume the throne as long as Jonathan was alive.

Key Message of This Story

- **The flesh will ever be in conflict with the Spirit, fighting to subdue it and gain control.**
- **When the flesh becomes depraved, it will destroy the soul (will, mind, emotions):**
 - **Bringing mental and emotional damage.**
 - **Destroying the will to pursue the right paths of life.**
- **In the natural kingdom, the soul is the rightful ruler in our life -- with its will, intellect and natural talents.**
- **For God's Spirit to be elevated to the throne of our life, there must be a death to self.**

4.2 Death of Elisha - the Double Portion Miracle

Elisha knew that his master, the prophet Elijah, would soon be taken away. He diligently followed Elijah in his prolonged journeying to Gilgal, Bethel, Jericho, across Jordan and into the wilderness. He was not satisfied to inherit and experience the same level of ministry of his predecessor; he aspired to a double portion anointing to serve his generation.

2 Kings 2:9, 14

*9 And it came to pass, when they were gone over, that Elijah said unto Elisha, ask what I shall do for thee, before I be taken away from thee. And Elisha said, I pray thee, **let a double portion of thy spirit be upon me.***

*14 And he took the mantle of Elijah that fell from him, and smote the waters, and said, **where is the Lord God of Elijah?** And when he also had smitten the waters, they parted hither and thither: and Elisha went over.*

Elijah represents the Apostolic ministry and miracles of the first century book of Acts church. Elisha represents the latter day church of today. Like Elisha, we have been passed the mantel of the first century church fathers, but face a much greater task, with 220,000 times more people in the world today than at the time of Christ and the first century church in the book of Acts. We need a double portion miracle ministry to match the overwhelming sin, sickness, abuse, hopelessness and despair of our generation.

The mantel has fallen on the five-fold ministry and born-again believers of our generation:

- On whom the world depends to give them the Gospel.
- That will most likely witness the second coming of Jesus.
- That has been promised restoration and a great endtime harvest of souls.

To experience the restoration of Apostolic ministry and the double portion anointing, we must desperately desire it and be willing to

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

pay the required sacrifice. We must not be satisfied to just match the success of the prior generations -- we must seek the double portion. We cannot rely on our natural talents and giftings. We must pursue a divine encounter that will change us and thrust us into the harvest field with supernatural ability.

We must exercise the power of the first century church. Like Elisha standing at the Jordan, with the mantel of the old prophet, we must obtain and use the mantel of anointing that has been passed to us from our forefathers. We must go back and retrace the steps of our forefathers in the book of Acts. The Lord God of Elijah will show up when the Elijah of the Lord God shows up.

God is challenging our generation as He did prior generations:
*“Behold, I am the Lord, the God of all flesh: is **there any thing too hard for me?**” (Jer. 32:27)*

Our answer must be like Jeremiah’s: *“Ah Lord God! behold, thou hast made the heaven and the earth by thy great power and stretched out arm, and **there is nothing too hard for thee**” (Jer. 32:17).*

Elisha’s Double Portion Ministry

Elijah served Israel and had seven notable miracles in his ministry. Elisha took up the mantel and experienced thirteen notable miracles. Elisha died without witnessing the complete fulfillment of the double portion -- one miracle less than the double portion. But the God of the impossible will fulfill His Word and promises.

2 Kings 13:20-21 (Fourteenth Miracle)

*20 And **Elisha died**, and they buried him. And the bands of the Moabites invaded the land at the coming in of the year.*

*21 And it came to pass, as they were burying a man, that, behold, they spied a band of men; and they cast the man into the sepulcher of Elisha: and when the man was let down, and touched the bones of Elisha, **he revived, and stood up on his feet.***

The power for the double portion miracle, the fourteenth one, came after Elisha's death.

Key Message of This Story

- **Like the setting of the final double portion miracle, we are at the coming in of a new year -- a new millennia.**
- **Like Elijah, God's church has experienced many miracles over the past 100 years since the outpouring of His Spirit in the early twentieth century.**
- **One more monumental miracle remains for us to witness before the end of the Church Age. That is the miracle of a great endtime revival, with the resurrection of many dead in their trespasses and sins.**
- **That final double portion miracle of restoration of many lost souls will only come as it did with Elisha -- with the death of the man of God. For us, this will be a death to:**
 - **Our mind to have the mind of Christ.**
 - **Our ways to follow the ways of God.**
 - **Our emotions to possess the love and compassion of Christ for lost humanity.**
 - **Our will to do the will of God.**

4.3 The Fading of the Outer Man

In autumn, green maple tree leaves turn to brilliant golden colors of bright gold, reds, pinks, and yellows. Actually, these colors have been present since spring. During the summer months, they are not visible because green chlorophyll in the leaves overpowers the colors. When the nights become cool and daylight hours are short, the tree stops manufacturing chlorophyll. Then the green fades and these beautiful colors emerge.

We are like those leaves. In our dual nature, we have an outer man and an inner man, a man of the flesh and a man of the Spirit.

PARTNERSHIP WITH A SUPERNATURAL GOD

God's Spirit works through our inner spirit. Our problem is that we often try unsuccessfully to work for God through our outer person (with our natural talents and abilities). Like the green chlorophyll; our natural life is obscuring the power of the spiritual life within us. God wants that part to die. He wants the green to go. The veil of self must be removed to allow His spirit to be liberated to accomplish His will and work.

If we are to move with God into genuine Apostolic ministry and supernatural power of the Holy Ghost, that significantly affects our lost world, there must be a death to the flesh. This voluntary death is in joining Christ on the cross: *"And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts"* (Gal. 5:24).

As the outer man fades, the glory of God, resident in the inner man, can come shining through as light to a dark and hopeless world. There will be a beautiful radiance; and a release of the supernatural that we have never experienced.

- **So the message is clear -- the green must go. If we are to move deeper into the power of the supernatural, it cannot be church and religion as usual. It cannot be routine, formatted religious behavior. The outer man must fade to reveal the radiance of God's beauty and supernatural power through the inner man.**

II.

Restoration of Apostolic Ministry

God's Greatest Masterpiece

God's greatest design and greatest creation, His masterpiece, was not the massive and magnificent universe. It would be created 4,000 years later -- the New Testament Church, which He purchased with His own blood.

1. God is the Master Architect

God is the Master Architect, Master Creator, Master Designer and the Master Builder. God always completes the work that He starts. The only exception is when man removes himself from the Master's hands.

At the creation of the universe, God was the Master Architect and Designer. With just a few simple commands, He spoke it all into existence. Seven times God said, "*Let there be*" and the sun, moon, stars and earth with its animal and plant life was created. In six days, God finished His work of creation; on the seventh day He rested from all His work.

1.1 God's Greatest Work at Creation - Man

The most important created thing was not the magnificent universe. God's greatest work was the creation of man. Through God's spoken Word the universe, earth and animal kingdom were created. But this is not so with man; God did not speak man into existence. Instead, He carefully and lovingly formed man in His own image and breathed into him the breath of life. Man was created by God's intimate touch because He is a personal God.

Gen. 1:7, 27

7 And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground and

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

27 So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.

-- From Search for Truth Home Bible Study

Man is a spirit-being, made to walk in fellowship with God. Man's spirit was made to rule his soul (will, mind, emotions) and the subjected soul was meant to rule the body. The body is merely a house in which the spirit and soul dwell.

Man's soul contains His reasoning facilities which animals do not have. A crowning feature of the soul is man's will. The power of choice and the ability to choose make man distinctly different. Without this will, he would have been mechanical. Since God could have no fellowship with a robot, He risked creating a being with a will, knowing that man could choose to disobey.¹

God created man with reasoning power and a free will to have fellowship with Him and bring Him pleasure.

Rev. 4:11

11 Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.

Our infinite God, creator of the magnificent universe, yearns for a close relationship with us -- His choice creatures. He is most pleased and satisfied when we respond to His love and His call to partner with Him in His business.

1.2 God's Greatest Masterpiece - the Church

God's greatest design and greatest creation, His masterpiece, would be created 4,000 years later. That is the **New Testament church which He purchased with His own blood.**

Acts 20:28

28 . . . The church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

Rev. 1:5

5 . . . Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood.

Creation of the massive, measureless universe is referenced in Scripture to help us understand the greatness and power of our supernatural God. However, God places a much greater emphasis on the love and redemption of His chosen people -- the nation of Israel in the Old Testament and His church in the New Testament.

There are more stars in the universe than there are grains of sand on all the seashores in the world. The visible universe contains thirty billion, trillion stars. But only a portion of one Scripture was used to describe their creation. *"And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: **he made the stars also**" (Gen. 1:16).* But God took Moses to the top of Mount Sinai and used many chapters to tell him how to make a tabernacle out of badger skins, because that was a part of His redemption plan for mankind.

The major theme of the Old Testament is about God's plan of redemption and a looking forward to the day when He would replace Moses' Tabernacle, dwelling among men. The major theme of the New Testament is the story of redemption, with God coming to this earth in human form to suffer, bleed and die for man. He made the supreme sacrifice so that we could become the tabernacle of His Spirit -- *"a treasure in earthen vessels."*

From the cross, Jesus' final words were, ***"It is finished."*** Christ's

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

redemption and full payment for man's sins was paid. The veil in the temple was torn away, allowing humanity to approach deity. This made possible the birth of the New Testament church on the Day of Pentecost when God's Spirit came to dwell in man's spirit.

The universe is magnificent and fathomless and our omnipotent, supernatural God speaks of His greatness through its creation. But it did not cost God anything to create the universe and the stars. However, to redeem our souls, He had to come to this earth tabernacled in human flesh to suffer and die.

A few short verses describe the creation of the universe, but thousands of Scriptures written by 32 writers across 3,600 years of man's day speak of **what is most important to God**. And that is the **message of redemption which He has commissioned His church to proclaim**.

The importance of the church and its message of redemption are magnified by God's timeline of planning and building His masterpiece -- His church:

- Our beautiful world with its skylights and life was created in six days.
- There were numerous prophecies, types and shadows recorded in the Old Testament over several thousand years, regarding the coming of the Messiah and the New Testament church that would be revealed after Christ's death at Calvary.
- God has been building His church for 2,000 years.

God's creative power is still working to continue building His church -- **His greatest creation**. He will finish the work the way He designed from the foundation of the world.

Eph. 5:25-27

*25 . . . Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it;
26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water
by the word,*

*27 That he might present it to himself a **glorious church**, not*

having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

Isa. 9:7

*7 Of the **increase of his government and peace there shall be no end**, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even forever. **The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this.***

Isa. 46:10

*10 Declaring the end from the beginning and from ancient times the things that are not yet done; saying, My counsel shall stand, and **I will do all my pleasure:***

- **The mission of God's masterpiece, the church, is to proclaim His greatest message -- one of redemption and eternal life, because He wants man to spend eternity with Him.**
- **The last day church, just before the coming of Jesus Christ, will not be weak and in a survival mode. But God's promise of restoration will be fulfilled and the church will be at the zenith of its glory -- exceeding that of the first century book of Acts church.**
- **Jesus Christ is coming back after a:**
 - **Holy church.**
 - **Glorious church.**
 - **Triumphant church.**
 - **Revival church evangelizing the world with the redemption message of Jesus Christ.**
 - **Church demonstrating the supernatural power of its Master Designer and Builder.**

***Restoration of born-again Christians to the
Apostolic ministry of our forefathers in the book of
Acts will bring restoration to those in our city that are
separated from God by walls of sin, abuse and hopeless
despair.***

2. God is the Author of Restoration

From the opening pages of the Bible until the closing of the last book, we see that God is both the great Creator and the Master of Restoration. When something that God has created has been **reduced to an inferior** state of being, God has a purpose and plan to **reinstate it to, and beyond, its original glory**.

2.1 Restoration of the Earth to the Garden of Eden State

At the dawn of creation, God placed Adam and Eve in a wonderful paradise, the Garden of Eden:

- There was no sickness.
- There was no death.
- There were no wild animals, they did not kill one another; they neither feared nor harmed man.
- There were no thorns or thistles.
- There was perfect peace on earth.

When Adam and Eve sinned, all of this changed and the earth was cursed. Sickness and death entered into the world. Animals became wild and began to kill each other. Man killed animals and animals killed man. Thorns and thistles became abundant and thwarted man's efforts to plant and cultivate good plants. Peace was replaced with fighting and wars.

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

Satan sabotaged God's magnificent plan for man. But God will have His way in returning the earth to the Garden of Eden environment. This day, called the Kingdom Age or the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ, of restoration is coming, when God sets up His Kingdom on earth. The earth will be restored to the Garden of Eden state:

- There will be no sickness.
- Men will live long lives.
- There will be no wild animals.
- There will be no thorns or thistles.
- There will be peace; fighting and wars will cease.

Isa. 55:13

13 Instead of the thorn shall come up the fir tree, and instead of the brier shall come up the myrtle tree . . .

Isa. 11:6-9

6 In that day the wolf and the lamb will live together; the leopard will lie down with the baby goat. The calf and the yearling will be safe with the lion, and a little child will lead them all.

7 The cow will graze near the bear. The cub and the calf will lie down together. The lion will eat hay like a cow.

8 The baby will play safely near the hole of a cobra. Yes, a little child will put its hand in a nest of deadly snakes without harm.

9 Nothing will hurt or destroy in all my holy mountain, for as the waters fill the sea, so the earth will be filled with people who know the LORD. NLT

Isa. 65:20

20 No longer will babies die when only a few days old; no longer will men be considered old at 100! Only sinners will die that young! TLB

Isa. 2:4, Micah 4:3

4 And He shall judge between the nations and shall decide [disputes] for many peoples; and they shall beat their swords into

*plowshares and their spears into pruning hooks. Nation shall not lift up sword against nation, **neither shall they learn war any more.** AMP*

- **God is the author of restoration!**

2.2 Restoration of the Earth -- Winter to Spring

When God created the earth, He set in motion the seasons of the year -- a continuous cycle of summer, fall, winter and spring. In the winter the grass, plants and trees lose their lifelike appearance. Some animals hibernate in a death-like state. It is very dismal and the earth appears to be dead.

But regardless how harsh and dead the earth may appear, there is a promise of life and springtime. We just have to wait a few months for God's plan of restoration when the season turns to spring and the earth flourishes again with the beauty of restored life.

Gen. 8:22

22 While the earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease.

Song of Solomon 2:11-12

*11 For, lo, the **winter is past**, the rain is over and gone;*

*12 The **flowers appear** on the earth; the time of the **singing of birds** is come, and the voice of the turtle is heard in our land.*

- **God is a God of restoration!**

2.3 Jubilee -- The Year of Restoration

In the Old Testament, Israel was commanded to plant and work the land for six years; in the seventh year let it rest and be restored. Man was to work six days and rest on the seventh day.

Ex. 23:10-12

10 And six years thou shalt sow thy land, and shalt gather in the fruits thereof:

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

*11 But the **seventh year** thou shalt let it rest and lie still; that the poor of thy people may eat: and what they leave the beasts of the field shall eat. In like manner thou shalt deal with thy vineyard, and with thy oliveyard.*

*12 Six days thou shalt do thy work, and on the **seventh day** thou shalt rest: that thine ox and thine ass may **rest**, and the son of thy handmaid, and the stranger, may be **refreshed**.*

After seven cycles of seven years (49 years), came the Year of Jubilee -- the year of restoration:

- Land would be restored back to its original owner.
- Israelites who had become slaves would be restored to freedom.

Lev. 25:10, 13, 20, 21, 25, 28, 39-41, 54, 55

*10 Set this year apart as holy, a time to proclaim **freedom** throughout the land for all who live there. It will be a jubilee year for you, when each of you may **return to the land that belonged to your ancestors** and return to your own clan.*

13 In the Year of Jubilee each of you may return to the land that belonged to your ancestors.

20 But you might ask, ‘What will we eat during the seventh year, since we are not allowed to plant or harvest crops that year?’

21 Be assured that I will send my blessing for you in the sixth year, so the land will produce a crop large enough for three years.

25 If one of your fellow Israelites falls into poverty and is forced to sell some family land, then a close relative should buy it back for him.

*28 But if the original owner cannot afford to buy back the land, it will remain with the new owner until the next Year of Jubilee. In the jubilee year, **the land must be returned to the original owners** so they can return to their family land.*

39 If one of your fellow Israelites falls into poverty and is forced to sell himself to you, do not treat him as a slave.

40 Treat him instead as a hired worker or as a temporary resident

*who lives with you, and **he will serve you only until the Year of Jubilee.***

*41 **At that time he and his children will no longer be obligated to you, and they will return to their clans and go back to the land originally allotted to their ancestors.***

*54 If any Israelites have not been bought back by the time the Year of Jubilee arrives, **they and their children must be set free at that time.***

*55 For the people of Israel belong to me. They are my servants, whom I brought out of the land of Egypt. I am the LORD your God.
NLT*

Jesus is Our Jubilee

When Jesus began His earthly ministry at the age of 30, it was approximately the time of the thirtieth jubilee.

After Jesus' forty days of fasting and the temptation by the devil in the wilderness, He began His miracle ministry. He went to the synagogue and preached His first recorded message from Isaiah 61. It was a declaration of **His mission statement -- a message of restoration.**

Luke 4:14, 16-21

14 And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.

16 And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read.

17 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

*18 The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, **because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised.***

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

19 To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

20 And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him.

21 And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.

-- From Matthew Henry's Commentary

The acceptable year of the Lord. He came to let the world know that the God whom they had offended was willing to be reconciled to them, and to accept them upon new terms; that there was yet a way of making their services acceptable to him; that there is now a time of good will toward men. It alludes to the **year of release, or that of jubilee**, which was an acceptable year to servants, who were then set at liberty; to debtors, against whom all actions then dropped; and to those who had mortgaged their lands, for then they returned to them again. Christ came to sound the jubilee trumpet; and blessed were they that heard the joyful sound, Ps. 89:15. It was an acceptable time, for it was a day of salvation.¹

-- From Barnes' Notes

To preach the acceptable year of the Lord. The time when God is willing to accept people, or to receive sinners coming to him. The Gospel assures us that the guilty "may" return, and that God will graciously receive them. There is, perhaps, here, an allusion to the **Year of Jubilee -- the fiftieth year**, when the trumpet was blown, and through the whole land proclamation was made of the liberty of Hebrew slaves, of the remission of debts, and of the restoration of possessions to their original families, Lev 25:8-13. The phrase "the acceptable year" means the time when it would be acceptable to God to proclaim such a message, or agreeable to him to wit, under the Gospel.²

God is the Author of Restoration

The acceptable year of the Lord was the Year of Jubilee or the chosen year. This was the year of freedom, deliverance and restoration when lost property or freedom would be restored.

The jubilees of the Old Testament were restoration of physical things. In the New Testament Jesus initiated a spiritual jubilee -- a spiritual restoration. This jubilee would bring restoration of the complete man -- body (*physical needs*), soul (*emotional needs*), and spirit (*spiritual needs*).

Jesus' ministry proclaimed a message that:

- We no longer must wait until the 50th year of Jubilee and restoration.
- We no longer must wait until a specific date or time for freedom from slavery to sin and satan.
- **I am your Jubilee.**

Jesus proclaimed that jubilee no longer symbolized a year, but Jubilee is a person -- Jesus Christ. He is our Jubilee, our Redeemer, our hope, and promise of restoration.

The purpose of Jesus Christ's ministry was to restore what Adam had relinquished to satan in the garden. This spiritual restoration -
- **dominion power over satan and sickness** was first seen when Jesus commissioned His twelve disciples to minister. Also, these were the last words He spoke to His disciples before His ascension.

Matt. 10:5, 8

*5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying,
8 **Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils:**
freely ye have received, freely give.*

Mark 16:17-18

*17 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they **cast out devils**; they shall speak with new tongues;*

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

*18 They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall **lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.***

The Seventieth Jubilee Restoration (*Physical and Spiritual*)

Although we don't observe the Old Testament event of jubilee, the timetable for subsequent jubilees has continued. There were approximately 30 jubilees before Christ under the Law. To complete the cycle of 70 jubilees, there would be approximately 40 jubilee periods after Christ..

The number 70 is very significant in Scripture. The number six is man's number and the number seven is God's number. The number 10 represents completeness. Seven times ten is seventy. The number 70 appears many times in Scripture. It is the number of man's days -- threescore and ten.

It is believed by some that the 70th jubilee will be a restoration of the earth to the Garden of Eden condition and the beginning of the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on this earth. It will be the:

- Celebration of all celebrations.
- Jubilee of all jubilees.
- Restoration of all restorations.
- Restoration of the earth to the Garden of Eden state (*physical*).
- Restoration of Jesus Christ as Lord and King -- ruler of righteousness here on the earth (*spiritual*).

2.4 Old Testament Laws of Restoration

At the giving of the Law to Moses at Mount Sinai, the laws of restitution were established by God. If something was stolen, lost or damaged, the person responsible must make restitution by paying back double the amount of the loss.

Ex. 22:7, 9-12, 14

*7 If a man shall deliver unto his neighbor money or stuff to keep, and it be stolen out of the man's house; if the thief be found, **let him pay double.***

*9 For all manner of trespass, whether it be for ox, for ass, for sheep, for raiment, or for any manner of lost thing, which another challengeth to be his, the cause of both parties shall come before the judges; and whom the judges shall condemn, **he shall pay double unto his neighbor.***

10 If a man deliver unto his neighbor an ass, or an ox, or a sheep, or any beast, to keep; and it die, or be hurt, or driven away, no man seeing it:

*11 Then shall an oath of the Lord be between them both, that he hath not put his hand unto his neighbor's goods; and the owner of it shall accept thereof, and **he shall not make it good.***

*12 And if it be stolen from him, he shall **make restitution** unto the owner thereof.*

*14 And if a man borrow ought of his neighbor, and it be hurt, or die, the owner thereof being not with it, he **shall surely make it good.***

In King Solomon's Proverbs of wisdom, he states that a thief must repay seven times the amount of the loss in making restitution.

Prov. 6:30-31

30 Men do not despise a thief, if he steal to satisfy his soul when he is hungry;

31 But if he be found, he shall restore sevenfold; he shall give all the substance of his house.

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

Job's Testimony of Restoration

Job was a very wealthy man. Satan told God, "If You take away Job's blessings, he will curse You." God allowed Satan to destroy all of Job's possessions and his health.

Although the devil caused great loss to Job's possessions, family and health; God restored to him a double portion. God gave Job twice as much as before.

1. God **doubled Job's years**. Bible commentaries suggest that Job was 70 years old at the time of his calamities. God gave him more than 70 additional years. He gave him twice that -- 140 years after his restoration.

Job 42:16 After this lived Job an hundred and forty years, and saw his sons, and his sons' sons, even four generations.

2. God **doubled Job's flock of sheep**. Originally, he owned 7,000 sheep. Afterward, God gave him 14,000.
3. God **doubled Job's herd of camels**. His original herd of 3,000 camels were replaced with 6,000.
4. God **doubled Job's herd of oxen**. 1,000 oxen replaced the original 500 oxen.
5. God **doubled Job's herd of donkeys**. 500 donkeys were killed, but were replaced by 1,000.
6. God **doubled Job's family**. Before his loss, he had seven sons and three daughters. God gave Job seven more sons and three more daughters. He now had 20 sons and daughters -- 10 in heaven and 10 on earth.

Job 42:12, 13, 15

*12 So the Lord blessed the latter end of Job more than his beginning: for he had **fourteen thousand sheep, and six thousand camels, and a thousand yoke of oxen, and a thousand donkeys.***

13 He had also seven sons and three daughters.

God is the Author of Restoration

15 And in all the land were no women found so fair as the daughters of Job: and their father gave them inheritance among their brethren.

- **God is a God of Restoration!**

Getting ready to step through a door that leads to a higher plane of living; a deeper relationship requires another level of purification by removing hindrances from our life, not just sins, but weights and distractions to the spiritual man.

3. Two Dimensions of Restoration

Webster's definition of restoration is: to reinstate, renew, recover, regain, reclaim, reestablish, regain, restore to the original condition or better. This meaning may be appropriate regarding a backslider being restored to their relationship with God. But the concept of restoration addressed in this chapter refers to a place that we have not yet attained -- God's eternal will and purpose for our life.

Refer to the following charts in Appendix 1:

Chart C-6 New Levels of Relationship and Dominion --
Passion and Compassion

Chart C-11 Breakthrough to New Levels of Relationship and
Dominion

The first dimension of restoration concerns the sinner and the second dimension of restoration addresses the Christian.

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

Two Dimensions of Restoration

1. The **first dimension of restoration** is for a sinner, to a place he has never occupied because he has never been free from sin. This is restoration to the relationship that Adam enjoyed with God before the fall. This process has four sequential steps: believing, repentance, baptism (born of the water) and receiving the Holy Spirit (born of the Spirit). This process can be completed in one day.

Many Christians stop here in their relationship with God. But salvation is a journey that should take us into spiritual maturity and God's purpose for our lives.

2. The **second dimension of restoration** is for a Christian, not to somewhere they have occupied in the Kingdom of God, but to the place that was in God's eternal blueprint before they were born -- to His eternal will and purpose. This process is a circle -- a continuous cycle of transformation. It is spiritual maturity that God desires for us to become like Him -- partakers of His divine nature as sons of God.

This second dimension of restoration is the objective and purpose of this book.

Living for God is a journey -- not a destination. There are many levels and depths to reach for as we progress in our walk with God. Our goal must be for the restoration of the Apostolic ministry with the accompanying power, evangelism, and miracles of the first century church.

It is God's will for us to be involved in the restoration of the church and the last day harvest:

Two Dimensions of Restoration

- To pursue new places in the Spirit.
- To be led by the Spirit further into the Father's business -- the battlefield and the harvest field.

To better understand this concept, we should examine Israel's deliverance from Egypt, their wilderness experience, crossing Jordan and restoration to the Promised Land. Apostle Paul emphasizes the importance of these events in his letter to the Corinthians.

Apostle Paul's Warning

Apostle Paul warns the church to learn from their example and avoid the sins of failing to discern and fulfill the purpose and will of God.

1 Cor. 10:1-12

Remember our history, friends, and be warned. All our ancestors were led by the providential Cloud and taken miraculously through the Sea.

They went through the waters, in a baptism like ours, as Moses led them from enslaving death to salvation life. They all ate and drank identical food and drink, meals provided daily by God. They drank from the Rock, God's fountain for them that stayed with them wherever they were. And the Rock was Christ.

*But just experiencing God's wonder and grace didn't seem to mean much -- most of them were defeated by temptation during the hard times in the desert, and **God was not pleased. The same thing could happen to us. We must be on guard** so that we never get caught up in wanting our own way as they did.*

These are all warning markers -- DANGER! -- in our history books, written down so that we don't repeat their mistakes. Our positions in the story are parallel -- they at the beginning, we at the end -- and we are just as capable of messing it up as they were. MSG

1 Cor. 10:11

11 Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

they are written for our admonition.

Restoration of the Nation of Israel

The nation of Israel had been in Egyptian bondage for 400 years. In God's time, they experienced a miraculous deliverance and restoration. Their restoration was experienced in two dimensions:

1. The first generation experienced miraculous deliverance from Egyptian slavery to restoration and freedom as sons of Abraham.
2. Forty years later, the second generation experienced God's full purpose and will by crossing Jordan, and regaining the inheritance of their forefathers. With God's miraculous help, they drove out the enemies and were restored to Canaan -- the land flowing with milk and honey. This was the land that God had given to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob as an everlasting covenant, over 500 years before.

Gen. 15:18

18 In the same day the LORD made a covenant with Abram, saying, Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates:

Gen. 13:15

15 For all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed for ever.

Gen. 17:8

*8 And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, **all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession;** and I will be their God.*

3.1 The First Dimension of Restoration

- **The first dimension of restoration for Israel was deliverance from Egyptian bondage. This symbolizes our past as sinners in bondage to satan.**

Egypt symbolizes the world, and Pharaoh is a type of satan. Pharaoh was beating them and killing their children. When their misery reached an intolerable level, they sought God's help and He sent a deliverer. This is how many people come to God, when the pain of satan is too much to bear, they cry out to God who brings deliverance.

Moses symbolizes a preacher of deliverance. The Red Sea is a type of baptism, a barrier requiring divine intervention to get through. It represents drowning the past.

Israel left Egypt triumphantly. God wanted Pharaoh, Egypt and all nations to know that He had delivered His people. It is still God's will to deliver people from satan's bondage.

One of the greatest needs of the endtime is for the Spirit of deliverance to be present in our lives and in our churches. Our society is confused and enslaved by satan -- the god of this world. Alcohol and drug addiction is one of the worst curses of the world. Millions of people are bound by these and other addictions of sin and abuse.

2 Cor. 4:4

4 The god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.

2 Tim. 2:26

26 And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

1 John 5:19

19 We know that we are children of God and that all the rest of

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

the world around us is under satan's power and control. TLB

No bondage is too strong and no situation too difficult for God to bring mighty deliverance. The greatest thing we have to offer the world is our testimony of deliverance -- **“You don’t have to stay in the abuse and prison of Egypt; there is hope.”**

The good news is, when we come into the Kingdom of God, satan who has dominion over us, will become subject to us through the name and blood of Jesus Christ that has been applied to our life.

In one day, the Israelites were restored from slavery to Pharaoh, to freedom. Likewise, at the salvation experience, we are restored from enslavement to satan to freedom.

The Wilderness

The wilderness was intended to be a time of testing and training, a time of God revealing Himself and His laws. It was to be a temporary passage, not a permanent home.

The Israelites were out of Egypt, but Egypt was not out of them. They were inward focused with a mentality of “give me” -- give me food, water, shelter, etc. They were inwardly focused on their abilities vs. the abilities of their supernatural God.

When they came to the border of the Promised Land, Moses sent twelve spies to scout the land. The twelve spies returned, and all agreed, the land was tremendously blessed. However, ten spies brought an evil report: “There are giants in the land who are stronger than us. We are not able to possess Canaan.”

Num. 13:33

*33 And there we saw the giants, the sons of Anak, which come of the giants: and **we were in our own sight as grasshoppers**, and so we were in their sight.*

“They are bigger than us. We look like grasshoppers compared to them.” This grasshopper mentality (a “we be” mentality)

focused on their resources and not those of their supernatural God.

How could they think this way when they were surrounded by reminders of the visible power of their miraculous God?

- Supernatural deliverance from the world's most powerful army.
- Their enemies destroyed in the Red Sea.
- Supernatural manna falling from heaven every day.
- Supernatural water from the rock daily.
- Supernatural guidance and protection with the cloud to shade them from the hot desert sun and the pillar of fire to give light and heat in the cold desert at night.
- Supernatural provision for shoes and clothes that did not wear out.

Because the children of Israel believed the evil report of the ten spies, God became angry. Three times He said, ***“Your carcasses shall fall in the wilderness”***. He cursed that generation to wander in the wilderness until they all died.

- **God did not curse them because they were disobeying the Ten Commandments, but simply because they were not willing to follow His will for them to possess the Promised Land.**

Num. 32:13

13 And the LORD's anger was kindled against Israel, and he made them wander in the wilderness forty years, until all the generation, that had done evil in the sight of the LORD, was consumed.

Num. 14:29-35

29 Your carcasses shall fall in this wilderness; and all that were numbered of you, according to your whole number, from twenty years old and upward, which have murmured against me, 30 Doubtless ye shall not come into the land, concerning which I

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

sware to make you dwell therein, save Caleb the son of Jephunneh, and Joshua the son of Nun.

31 But your little ones, which ye said should be a prey, them will I bring in, and they shall know the land which ye have despised.

*32 But as for you, **your carcasses, they shall fall in this wilderness.***

*33 And your children shall wander in the wilderness forty years, and bear your whoredoms, until **your carcasses be wasted in the wilderness.***

34 After the number of the days in which ye searched the land, even forty days, each day for a year, shall ye bear your iniquities, even forty years, and ye shall know my breach of promise.

35 I the LORD have said, I will surely do it unto all this evil congregation, that are gathered together against me: in this wilderness they shall be consumed, and there they shall die.

Ps. 78:40-43, 52-54, 56

*40 **How oft did they provoke him in the wilderness, and grieve him in the desert!***

*41 **Yea, they turned back and tempted God, and limited the holy one of Israel.***

42 They remembered not his hand, nor the day when he delivered them from the enemy.

43 How he had wrought his signs in Egypt, and his wonders in the field of Zoan:

52 But made his own people to go forth like sheep, and guided them in the wilderness like a flock.

53 And he led them on safely, so that they feared not: but the sea overwhelmed their enemies.

54 And he brought them to the border of his sanctuary, even to this mountain, which his right hand had purchased.

*56 **Yet they tempted and provoked the most high God, and kept not his testimonies.***

For 40 years, they wandered in the wilderness; their path led them close to the borders of the Promised Land then circled back into the wilderness. They had no mission and no vision. Their only

goal was to stay in the protection of the camp -- stay in the church. Living like this was a big price to pay for staying in their comfort zone, determined to have their way and not God's way. Had they been willing, they could have been enjoying the blessings of a land flowing with milk and honey.

Wilderness Thinking and Actions

The children of Israel's carnal thinking and actions should be a warning to us. Because, if we become carnal, we can fall into the same sin of doubt and unbelief that limits God. We must avoid actions that say:

- Following the purpose of God is too difficult.
- The problems, addictions and sins of our generation are too innumerable.
- The price is too great to partner with God in the supernatural.

We must look beyond the challenges and our limited abilities and focus on God's great and powerful supernatural abilities.

Wilderness actions means following the same familiar paths of a spiritual wandering. We have been here many times -- going to church becoming a routine ritual:

- Is it time to go to church again?
- How long is he going to preach?
- When will this service end?

Wilderness thinking involves the questions of, "What do I have to give up to be a part of the church? How much can I do and still be in fellowship with the church?" When comparing things in our kingdom to things in God's, our mind is working with the wrong logic. Carnal things cannot be compared to spiritual things. There is no comparison of our temporal kingdom to His eternal Kingdom.

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

We should aspire to the meaning of the song, **“Take This Whole World, but Give Me Jesus”**. Jesus stressed this concept in the book of Mark.

Mark 8:36-37

36 And what do you benefit if you gain the whole world but lose your own soul?

37 Is anything worth more than your soul? NLT

We can experience the goodness of God, and become comfortable in the freedom from Egyptian bondage, but fail to pursue our calling! Israel’s 40 years of wandering in the wilderness symbolizes those willing to come out of the world but unwilling to pay the price to partner with God in His plan for their lives:

- Remaining in a comfort zone, making few sacrifices.
- On the same path for years with little spiritual growth.
- Worshipping God becomes mechanical and ritualistic.
- Depending less on God, operating more with our abilities.

What good is it to leave Egypt and die in the wilderness? They were never able to rid themselves of their slave mentality having experienced being whipped and driven by their masters.

If we are following God, it will not be by being forced or driven by the ministry. People who have to be driven usually revert to their old ways when such pressure is removed. For these, there cannot be a rule book thick enough to keep them on the right path.

The First Message -- “Come Out”

Coming out of Egypt represents separating ourselves from the world. **It is not good enough to merely separate from the world.** The world is going in the wrong direction so fast that if we just keep a distance from the world, it will lead us to hell. But we must distance ourselves from it by **separating ourselves unto God**. When we separate ourselves unto God, we are separating ourselves from the world. Therefore, there will be nothing in our lives that looks like, thinks like, or acts like the world!

Two Dimensions of Restoration

2 Cor. 6:17

*17 Wherefore **come out** from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you.*

1 Peter 2:9

*9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath **called you out** of darkness into his marvellous light.*

The Second message -- “Go In”

Deut. 1:8

*8 Behold, I have set the land before you: **go in** and possess the land which the LORD sware unto your fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, to give unto them and to their seed after them.*

Deut. 11:31

*31 For ye shall pass over Jordan to **go in** to possess the land which the LORD your God giveth you, and ye shall possess it, and dwell therein.*

The second message, repeated over and over again by God (*Deut. 4:1, 6:18, 8:1, 9:1, 10:11, 11:8, 27:3, Josh. 1:11*), was to enter the Promised Land. To us, as believers, this is stepping into God’s eternal purpose where we are:

- More concerned about His Kingdom than our own.
- Pursuing His business more fervently than ours.

Deliverance from Egypt is a wonderful truth, and we must proclaim the message to “**come out**” -- the first dimension of restoration. But we must also proclaim the message to “**go in**” -- the second dimension. There is a journey after being born of the water and the Spirit to move further into spiritual maturity. This involves reclaiming the Apostolic ministry of the first century church fathers:

- Becoming a book of Acts Christian.
- Participating in the supernatural that brings dominion over

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

satan and sickness.

- Partnering with a supernatural God in His business -- the battle and the harvest.

Victory in the Wilderness

The route to the Promised Land winds through the wilderness of trial and testing. God leads us to the wilderness experience to test us, purify us, and bring us to maturity. The test of the wilderness precedes promotion. Some submit to God's hand in their lives and move on to spiritual victories. Others become discouraged and experience a mere existence of spiritual wandering. But victory waits in the wilderness when we submit to God's plan of trial and testing.

3.2 The Second Dimension of Restoration

- **The second dimension of restoration for Israel was crossing Jordan into Canaan, driving out their enemies and regaining their inheritance.**
- **This represents spiritual maturity with the Christian advancing into the will and purpose of God, regaining the first century Apostolic ministry with supernatural signs and wonders, bringing dominion over satan and sickness.**

Restoration of Israel to Canaan

The nation of Israel had come to the end of the 40 year period of wandering in the wilderness. Except for Joshua and Caleb, every one 20 years or older had died in the wilderness because of their unbelief and unwillingness to step into God's purpose. Joshua was now their leader and they stood once again at the Jordan River looking over into Canaan -- this time willing and prepared to cross over.

The story of crossing Jordan is miraculous and beautiful, full of types and principles for those desiring to experience the second dimension of restoration:

1. Following the ark into new territory.
2. Supernaturally crossing Jordan and conquering Canaan.
3. Obstacles crossing Jordan at harvest time.
4. Sanctification for the supernatural.
5. Deliverance from self-imposed chains.
6. Temptation to stay in a comfort zone.
7. Encounter and engagement releases supernatural power.

3.2.1 Following the Ark into New Territory

Josh. 3:3, 4, 6, 11

*3 And they commanded the people, saying, **when ye see the ark of the covenant** of the Lord your God, and the priests the Levites bearing it, then **ye shall remove from your place, and go after it.***

*4 Yet there shall be a space between you and it, about two thousand cubits by measure: come not near unto it, that ye may know the way by which ye must go: for **ye have not passed this way heretofore.***

*6 And Joshua spake unto the priests, saying, take up the ark of the covenant, and pass over before the people. And they took up the **ark of the covenant, and went before the people.***

*11 Behold, the **ark of the covenant** of the Lord of all the earth passeth over before you into Jordan.*

Since Israel had left Egypt, they had been led and guided by a pillar of cloud by day and a pillar of fire by night. For 40 years, they did not have to work for their food; they had been miraculously fed with heavenly manna.

- **Upon entering Canaan into God's will and purpose, there were many changes. They began serving God at another level:**
 - a. They are in "new" territory, and it had been over 400 years since their forefathers possessed this land. They did not know how to proceed on their own.
 - b. They were daily depending on God for guidance, with no

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

pillars of cloud and fire to lead.

- The ark led the procession. It symbolizes **following the Spirit**.
- The manna stopped, so now they trusted God for provision.
- In unfamiliar territory, with many enemies, they depended on God's power to fight their battles.

- **As we move into the restoration of Apostolic ministry, likewise, there will be many changes:**

- a. We will be led by God's Spirit -- depending more on His anointing than on our natural abilities.
- b. Going to a new level in the Spirit:
 - It will not come by being forced or driven.
 - It will come with a hunger and desire for the deeper things of the Spirit.
 - It will come with a desire to please God.
- c. Without a fixed path to follow, we must depend on the Spirit every day for guidance. This will:
 - Drive us to pray and fast more.
 - Drive a hunger for new territory, new experiences.
- d. As we move into the supernatural dimension of the Spirit, we will have to answer some questions:
 - Will you go? Can you say, "Yes" without asking where?
 - Will you do this for Me? Can you say, "Yes" without asking what?

Because we are no longer operating with our abilities but with His divine ability (anointing). We are no longer focused on our kingdom but His Kingdom.

- e. In Canaan we will be out of our comfort zone:
 - We will be off stride, out of familiar territory.

Two Dimensions of Restoration

- We will be totally dependent on the leading of His Spirit.

Rom. 8:14

*14 For as many as are **led by the Spirit of God**, they are the sons of God.*

Gal. 5:25

*25 If we are living now by the Holy Spirit's power, let us **follow the Holy Spirit's leading in every part of our lives.** TLB*

- **To be led, there must be a leader and a follower. When we are led by the Spirit, we will be following Him -- not ahead and not too far behind.**

3.2.2 Supernatural Crossing Jordan and Conquest of Canaan

Josh. 3:13

*13 And it shall come to pass, as soon as the soles of the feet of the priests that bear the ark of the Lord, the **Lord of all the earth, shall rest in the waters of Jordan**, that the waters of Jordan shall be cut off from the waters that come down from above; and they shall stand upon an heap.*

Crossing the Red Sea represents our past; crossing the Jordan River represents our future where the Spirit wants to take us.

- **The same supernatural power required for crossing the Red Sea was needed to cross the Jordan River into Canaan. Likewise, the same supernatural power that delivered us from sin will be required to restore us to the Apostolic ministry of the first century church.**

Deut. 9:3

3 Understand therefore this day, that the LORD thy God is he which goeth over before thee; as a consuming fire he shall destroy them, and he shall bring them down before thy face: so shalt thou drive them out, and destroy them quickly, as the LORD hath said unto thee.

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

Josh. 3:7, 10

7 And the Lord said unto Joshua, this day will I begin to magnify thee in the sight of all Israel, that they may know that, as I was with Moses, so I will be with thee.

10 And Joshua said, hereby ye shall know that the living God is among you, and that he will without fail drive out from before you the Canaanites, and the Hittites, and the Hivites, and the Perizzites, and the Girgashites, and the Amorites, and the Jebusites.

Ex. 23:20, 22, 23

20 Behold, I send an angel before thee, to keep thee in the way, and to bring thee into the place which I have prepared.

22 But if thou shalt indeed obey his voice, and do all that I speak; then I will be an enemy unto thine enemies, and an adversary unto thine adversaries.

23 For mine angel shall go before thee, and bring thee in unto the Amorites, and the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the Canaanites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites: and I will cut them off.

The walls of the cities were still as strong as they had been 40 years earlier. The giants were as large and there were still battles to fight. But God would fight for them and send angelic help.

The angel of deliverance got them out of Egypt. Now on the other side of Jordan, the same angelic help is there to assist them in the battle and conquest of the Promised Land.

- **As we enter the place of restoration where God is calling us, there will be divine help from God and His angelic host.**
- **Living in Canaan is victory and excitement of conquest. God fights our battles as we partner with Him in the supernatural.**

- **The excitement of living in Canaan is being involved in people's lives being changed and delivered from the bondage of Egypt.**

3.2.3 Obstacles Crossing Jordan at Harvest Time

Josh. 3:15

15 And as they that bare the ark were come unto Jordan, and the feet of the priests that bare the ark were dipped in the brim of the water, (for Jordan overfloweth all his banks all the time of harvest.)

When God led His people to Jordan, it was at the most difficult and dangerous time. The waters of the river were at flood stage -- swift and swollen out of their banks.

As we move into the second dimension of restoration for the sole purpose of the great endtime harvest, the enemy will fight and try to distract us; there will be:

- Obstacles
- Opposition
- Problems and distractions

- **As we face these challenges, we must take a greater step of faith and trust in our supernatural God.**

Apostle Paul declared there to be an available mega door of opportunity for revival, but accompanied by much opposition.

1 Cor. 16:9

*9 For a **great door and effectual** is opened unto me, and there are **many adversaries**.*

*9 A huge **door of opportunity** for good work has opened up here. (There is also mushrooming **opposition**.) MSG*

Acts 19:9-11

*9 But when some became more and more **stubborn (hardened and unbelieving), discrediting and reviling and speaking evil of the***

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

Way [of the Lord] before the congregation, he separated himself from them, taking the disciples with him, and went on holding daily discussions in the lecture room of Tyrannus.

*10 This continued for two years, so that **all the inhabitants of [the province of] Asia, Jews as well as Greeks, heard the Word of the Lord** [concerning the attainment through Christ of eternal salvation in the kingdom of God].*

*11 And God did **unusual and extraordinary miracles** by the hands of Paul. AMP*

Apostle Paul accepted this challenge. He advanced into the supernatural dimension with the resulting wonderful testimony -- **"All of Asia heard the word."**

3.2.4 Sanctify for the Supernatural

The message of instruction before the miracle at the crossing of the Jordan was -- **to sanctify, to purify.**

Josh. 3:5

*5 And Joshua said unto the people, **sanctify yourselves:** for tomorrow the Lord will do **wonders among you.***

The same message was repeated to their leader, Joshua, before the first battle at Jericho, **"Sanctify, purify, you are standing on holy ground."**

Joshua scouted the site of the first battle at Jericho. He went alone, not willing to risk doomsayers bringing back an evil report as they had done 40 years before. He was immediately confronted by an angel with a drawn sword. Joshua challenged him, unafraid, because he had complete confidence in his great God.

The angel identified himself as the **captain of the Lord's host. Michael, the archangel in charge of battle,** arrived before Israel's first battle. Divine help was present in Canaan. There is angelic, supernatural help to those who will step into the second dimension of restoration. The message from the angel was one of

holiness -- **“take off your shoes, you are standing on holy ground”**.

Josh. 5:13-15

13 And it came to pass, when Joshua was by Jericho, that he lifted up his eyes and looked, and, behold, there stood a man over against him with his sword drawn in his hand: and Joshua went unto him, and said unto him, art thou for us, or for our adversaries?

*14 And he said, nay; but as **captain of the host of the Lord** am I now come. And Joshua fell on his face to the earth, and did worship, and said unto him, what saith my Lord unto his servant?*

*15 And the captain of the Lord's host said unto Joshua, **loose thy shoe from off thy foot; for the place whereon thou standest is holy.** And Joshua did so.*

This was the very same commandment that Moses experienced at the burning bush -- **take off your shoes, you are standing on holy ground**. Only two places in the Bible record this message:

1. The first dimension of restoration from Egyptian bondage.
 2. The second dimension of restoration -- entering and possessing the Promised Land.
- **The messages to Moses before deliverance from Egypt; to Israel before crossing the Jordan River; to Joshua before the first battle at Jericho was the same -- sanctify, purify, you are standing on holy ground.**
 - **This is the key message of restoration today, because without exception, God's promotion into the supernatural always comes from holy ground.**

1 Peter 1:16

16 Because it is written, be ye holy; for I am holy.

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

Heb. 12:14

*14 Follow peace with all men, and **holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord:***

A holy God demands separation that will bring us to a new level of purity and holiness. Being separated unto God and moving closer to Him, will lead us far from the world. We will not:

- Act like it
- Look like it
- Talk like it
- Dress like it
- Go to its places
- **Getting ready to step through a door that leads to the supernatural requires another level of purification from sins, weights, and distractions to the spiritual man.**

God's promotions come from holy ground. If we go to a new level in the Spirit, it will be from **holy ground**. We will be:

- Pure in our heart
- Pure in our goals
- Pure in our purpose
- Pure in our motives
- Pure in our spirit and attitude
- Pure in our love for God and our neighbor

Ps. 51:10

10 Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me.

3.2.5 Deliverance from Self-imposed Chains

Ps. 78:40-43

40 How oft did they provoke him in the wilderness, and grieve him in the desert!

*41 Yea, they turned back and tempted God, and **limited the holy one of Israel.***

42 They remembered not his hand, nor the day when he delivered them from the enemy.

43 How he had wrought his signs in Egypt, and his wonders in the field of Zoan:

God miraculously broke the chains of Pharaoh (a type of satan) and Egypt (a type of the world) that had them in bondage for 400 years. But because they could not believe God and were unwilling to follow His will into the Promised Land, they bound themselves with **self-imposed chains of their inability compared to God's ability**.

These chains of fear and doubt resulted because they magnified the strength of their enemy over God whose supernatural power had delivered them from slavery, destroyed their enemies, and was preserving them in the wilderness. These self-imposed chains kept them out of God's will, going in circles for 40 years.

The first dimension of restoration is being set free from Egypt -- delivered from the world and sin. **The second dimension is being freed from self limitations because of our limited natural abilities.**

We need to be set free from the comfort of our natural abilities that have limited God's supernatural ability to work through us. One of satan's greatest weapons is to confine us to the limitations of our abilities.

God's power is unlimited. The only limitations that He has are the ones we place on Him. God has a purpose for us beyond our individual natural abilities and talents, and He wants to anoint our life with His ability to fulfill His purpose. We must bind the powers of satan that have limited our thinking and our actions:

- Limiting our faith and our actions
- Causing us to be less than we should be for Him
- Creating ineffective outreach to our lost world

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

The comfort zone of our natural talents is not all that comfortable, because living and working for God with just our abilities and limitations leaves us:

- Struggling with knowing we need to do something more.
- Unfulfilled and frustrated with the results.
- Living in denial that we can be used in a greater way in His Kingdom -- denial that it is available for us.

We must have an increased desire to live and work for God beyond our abilities. And when we acknowledge that we can't accomplish God's will and purpose with our abilities, it will drive us to **prayer and fasting** -- depending on His supernatural ability.

We are living with a lost and dying world with insurmountable problems of sickness and sin. And they will only be reached and delivered as we partner with God and His supernatural abilities.

3.2.6 Temptation to Stay in a Comfort Zone

When Israel was getting ready to conquer the land of Canaan beyond Jordan, there were 2½ tribes (Ruben, Gad, and half of Manasseh) that wanted to settle on this side of Jordan.

Num. 32:1, 2, 4, 5

1 Now the children of Reuben and the children of Gad had a very great multitude of cattle: and when they saw the land of Jazer, and the land of Gilead, that, behold, the place was a place for cattle;

2 The children of Gad and the children of Reuben came and spake unto Moses, and to Eleazar the priest, and unto the princes of the congregation, saying,

4 Even the country which the Lord smote before the congregation of Israel, is a land for cattle, and thy servants have cattle:

*5 Wherefore, said they, if we have found grace in thy sight, let this land be given unto thy servants for a possession, **and bring us not over Jordan.***

Two Dimensions of Restoration

Their request was to remain at the edge of the Promised Land. They didn't want to risk their cattle, possessions and families. Fifteen hundred years later, when Jesus comes to the land of the Gaderenes, He was met by a demoniac. The devils entered a herd of swine, and the people demanded Jesus to leave their country.

Matt. 8:34

34 And, behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.

The country of those who would not risk restoration many generations before had become:

- A land of devils and swine (unclean, hated animals of the Jews).
- A people that rejected Jesus, the Savior -- the only one that could help them.

The promises of restoration had been too incredible for their ancestors to receive. Moses had already preached his message of Deuteronomy 28 -- a message of choosing a life of blessing (v. 1-14) or a life that is cursed (v. 15-68). Joshua had reminded them of these blessings and curses.

Deut. 28:1-6, 15-19

*1 And it shall come to pass, **if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the LORD thy God**, to observe and to do all his commandments which I command thee this day, that the LORD thy God will set thee on high above all nations of the earth,
2 And all these **blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee**, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the LORD thy God.*

*3 **Blessed** shalt thou be in the city, and blessed shalt thou be in the field.*

*4 **Blessed** shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy ground, and the fruit of thy cattle, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep.*

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

5 **Blessed** shall be thy basket and thy store.

6 **Blessed** shalt thou be when thou comest in, and blessed shalt thou be when thou goest out.

15 But it shall come to pass, if thou wilt not hearken unto the voice of the LORD thy God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command thee this day; that **all these curses shall come upon thee**, and overtake thee:

16 **Cursed** shalt thou be in the city, and cursed shalt thou be in the field.

17 **Cursed** shall be thy basket and thy store.

18 **Cursed** shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy land, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep.

19 **Cursed** shalt thou be when thou comest in, and cursed shalt thou be when thou goest out.

Nothing can stop or reverse the blessings of God on His people, but themselves. If we wholly follow Him, nothing can stop the blessings; and if not, nothing can stop the curses.

3.2.7 Encounter & Engagement Releases Supernatural Power

When Israel crossed the Jordan River, they began their conquest to claim their inheritance that God had promised their forefathers hundreds of years earlier. **As they engaged the enemy, the supernatural power of God worked miracles and great victories were won.** This concept is repeated many times in the Old and New Testaments.

The Battle at Jericho

The battle and victory at Jericho was an unprecedented miracle of gigantic proportions. It was the most important battle of the campaign because it was their first one. Victory would build faith in the nation of Israel and fear in their enemies. Likewise, defeat would have the opposite effect, bringing fear to Israel and confidence to the enemy.

- God brought about the miraculous at Jericho, but Israel had to encounter the enemy and march around the battle site as God

had instructed them.

- God miraculously caused the large fortress to fall down flat.
- The army of Israel entered the city and won a complete victory without losing one man.

Entire books could be written regarding the conquest of Canaan and God's miraculous power that brought victories. The following is a brief summary of a few battles where God fought in partnership with His people as they **encountered and engaged the enemy**.

The Battle at Ai

This was a smaller city than Jericho and Joshua was confident that 3,000 men could easily win. But they suffered defeat and 36 men died because Israel had sin in the camp. One man had disobeyed God and taken spoils from Jericho, reserved for God as the first spoils of the land.

The message once again to the nation of Israel was to **“sanctify”** and to **“purify”**.

Josh. 7:13

13 Sanctify the people, and say, Sanctify yourselves against to morrow: for thus saith the LORD God of Israel, There is an accursed thing in the midst of thee, O Israel: thou canst not stand before thine enemies, until ye take away the accursed thing from among you.

When the sin was eliminated from the camp, God worked once again for the army of Israel.

- God gave Joshua **the strategy for the battle** -- to set an ambush for the city of Ai.
- All of the army went to battle (vs. 3,000 the first time). Although God miraculously fights for His people, He also expects His people to encounter the enemy and engage in battle -- **engagement releases supernatural power**.
- 30,000 warriors went by night to set the ambush behind the

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

city and the rest of the army went to battle the next day, resulting in a great victory.

The Battle at Gibeon

This was the biggest challenge yet faced by Joshua and Israel. This battle was against five Amorite kings of Jerusalem, Hebron, Jarmuth, Lachish and Eglon.

But there are no small or large battles to our supernatural God. He worked **wonders and miracles** in giving Israel victory as they **engaged** the enemy:

- God confused the enemy.
- God dropped great stones from heaven on the enemy and killed more than all of Israel's army.
- One of the greatest miracles in recorded history occurred when Joshua and his army needed more daylight to completely destroy the enemy. At Joshua's request, God caused the **sun and moon to stand still**.

Josh. 10:8-14

8 And the LORD said unto Joshua, Fear them not: for I have delivered them into thine hand; there shall not a man of them stand before thee.

9 Joshua therefore came unto them suddenly, and went up from Gilgal all night.

10 And the LORD discomfited them before Israel, and slew them with a great slaughter at Gibeon, and chased them along the way that goeth up to Beth-horon, and smote them to Azekah, and unto Makkedah.

*11 And it came to pass, as they fled from before Israel, and were in the going down to Beth-horon, that **the LORD cast down great stones from heaven upon them** unto Azekah, and they died: they were more which died with hailstones than they whom the children of Israel slew with the sword.*

12 Then spake Joshua to the LORD in the day when the LORD delivered up the Amorites before the children of Israel, and he said

*in the sight of Israel, **Sun, stand thou still upon Gibeon; and thou, Moon, in the valley of Ajalon.***

*13 And the **sun stood still, and the moon stayed**, until the people had avenged themselves upon their enemies. Is not this written in the book of Jasher? So the sun stood still in the midst of heaven, and **hasted not to go down about a whole day.***

*14 And there was **no day like that before it or after it**, that the LORD hearkened unto the voice of a man: for **the LORD fought for Israel.***

David and Goliath

The Philistine army had challenged Israel. Their champion, Goliath, stood almost ten feet tall. He wore a bronze helmet, and his bronze coat of mail weighed 125 pounds. He also wore a bronze leg armor and carried a bronze javelin on his shoulder. The shaft of his spear was as heavy and thick as a weaver's beam, tipped with an iron spearhead weighing 15 pounds. His armor bearer walked ahead of him carrying a shield.

For 40 days, Goliath had taunted the army of Israel to send him a man to fight.

1 Sam. 17:11

11 When Saul and the Israelites heard this, they were terrified and deeply shaken.

When David, (sent by his father to take food to his soldier brothers), heard Goliath defying the army and God of Israel, he accepted the challenge to fight. David's private victories over the lion and bear had prepared him for public victory. **There can be no public victory until there is first a private victory.** David acknowledged that God, and not he, would obtain the victory over this imposing powerful enemy. David said, "*The Lord that delivered me out of the paw of the lion, and out of the paw of the bear, He will deliver me out of the hand of this Philistine.*"

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

When David killed the giant, Israel won a great battle over the Philistines.

1 Sam. 17:52

52 And the men of Israel and of Judah arose, and shouted, and pursued the Philistines, until thou come to the valley; and to the gates of Ekron. And the wounded of the Philistines fell down by the way to Shaaraim, even unto Gath, and unto Ekron.

It was the power of God, and not man who caused the great victory over the enemies of Israel.

- But before God could bring victory, someone who trusted God had to step onto the battlefield.
- Neither David's accuracy nor strength with a shepherd's sling and stone could not defeat the giant, but his actions of faith and trust in God.
- When David **engaged** the enemy with his abilities, it released the power of God to propel and guide the stone to the forehead of the giant.

Jonathan and His Armorbearer

The Philistines had come to battle against Israel with 30,000 chariots, 6,000 horsemen and countless soldiers. When the children of Israel saw the size of their overwhelming and imposing enemy, they hid in caves, in thickets, in rocks, in high places, and in pits. Some fled to the land of Gad and Gilead.

King Saul had a group of trembling soldiers following him. No one in Israel's army had a sword or spear except King Saul and his son Jonathan. It was a hopeless situation. Jonathan, like David, stepped into a dominion role to **engage** the enemy:

- Jonathan told his armorbearer, "*Come, and let us go over unto the garrison of these uncircumcised: **it may be that the LORD will work for us: for there is no restraint to the LORD to save by many or by few!***"

Two Dimensions of Restoration

- The enemy held an advantaged position upon the mountain. Unafraid, Jonathan said: *“If they say thus unto us, Tarry until we come to you; then we will stand still in our place, and will not go up unto them. But if they say thus, Come up unto us; then we will go up: for the LORD hath delivered them into our hand: and this shall be a sign unto us.”*
- Jonathan and his armorbearer scaled the rock and defeated the garrison of the enemy killing about 20 men.
- Then God sent a great earthquake (*a very great trembling*) which greatly frightened and confused the enemy. They began killing one another: *And the watchmen of Saul in Gibeah of Benjamin looked; and, behold, the multitude melted away, and they went on beating down one another.*
- When Jonathan **engaged** the enemy, God worked a miracle and fought for Israel, achieving a great victory.

1 Sam. 14:20-22

20 Then Saul and his six hundred men rushed out to the battle and found the Philistines killing each other, and there was terrible confusion everywhere.

21 And now the Hebrews who had been drafted into the Philistine army revolted and joined with the Israelis.

22 Finally even the men hiding in the hills joined the chase when they saw that the Philistines were running away. TLB

Jesus' Encounter With the Devil

The twofold mission of Jesus is the mission of His church today:

- Destroy the works of the devil, 1 John 3:8.
- Seek and save the lost, Luke 19:10.

To accomplish this mission, there would be an **encounter**, a **confrontation**, and an **engagement**, with the devil -- the Kingdom of light clashing against the kingdom of darkness.

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

When Jesus reached 30, the age of maturity for the culture of that day, He began His public ministry -- a ministry of miracles.

- He was first baptized by John in the Jordan River.
- Then He went into the wilderness and had an encounter and clash with satan.
- He left the wilderness in the **power of the Spirit** and immediately began His miracle ministry.

Luke 4:1, 2, 13, 14

*1 And Jesus being **full of the Holy Ghost** returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness,*

2 Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered.

13 And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.

*14 And Jesus returned in the **power of the Spirit** into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.*

Luke records the formula for release of power for the supernatural:

1. **Impartation** - Jesus went into the wilderness **full of the Holy Ghost**.
2. **Encounter and Engagement** - Jesus experienced conflict with satan.
3. **Release of Supernatural Power** - When Jesus defeated satan, He came out of the wilderness in the **power of the Spirit**, and His miracle ministry began.

The power, resident in Him, was released in that initial battle with satan. Jesus' ministry was simply a continued encounter and engagement in battle with the kingdom of darkness. Every time this occurred, power was released that defeated satan and brought miracles of deliverance and healing.

**Impartation + Encounter and Engagement
= Release of Power for Miracles**

Refer to Chart F-10, “Encounter and Engagement Releases Supernatural Power”, in Appendix 1.

Power in the Words of Jesus

Luke 4:32, 33, 35-37

*32 And they were **astonished at his doctrine: for his word was with power.***

33 And in the synagogue there was a man, which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and cried out with a loud voice,

*35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, **Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had thrown him in the midst, he came out of him, and hurt him not.***

*36 And they were all amazed, and spake among themselves, saying, **What a word is this! for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out.***

37 And the fame of him went out into every place of the country round about.

- **Jesus’ words had power because they were confirmed with a demonstration of the miraculous.**

Mark 16:20

*20 And they went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working with them, and **confirming the word with signs following.***

It is the will of God for every born-again believer to enter the second dimension of restoration and their words to have power -- confirmed by signs following. Rev. Jeff Arnold states, **“Doctrine without demonstration is frustration”.**

Conclusion

For those just coming to Christ, He wants to restore your life and elevate you to become a son of God. To the born-again saint of God, He wants to restore you to partner with Him in the supernatural power and miracles of the first century book of Acts church.

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

God is a God of restoration. The prophetic clocks point to midnight. And just before His coming, it is prophesied that there will be restoration of the church. It is the endtime, it's harvest time -- time for restoration.

Some of us have spent many years living for God. These years have prepared us for this era of time -- this last great harvest before the end of all things. Our best days are before us. All of our life experiences have prepared us for now and the few short days before the coming of Christ. No matter our age, let's answer "yes" to God's call, to His eternal purpose for our lives -- restoration to the supernatural dimension as a book of Acts Christian.

4. Restoration of the Latter Day Church

Israel was restored to their homeland after almost 2,000 years of being dispersed throughout the entire world. This did not happen overnight. It has been a lengthy process over 100 years, divinely orchestrated by God. Great movements tried to bring this about, as well as counter movements that attempted to sabotage this effort.

Likewise, there have been great movements of God, over the last 100 years to bring about restoration of the church and there have been many satan-inspired movements to hinder the plan of God.

To understand the restoration of Israel and the church, we must understand the dispersion, the decline and loss.

4.1 Decline and Restoration of Israel

For 19 centuries, the Jews were dispersed and persecuted throughout Europe, Asia, Africa and North and South America. First, the Romans trod down Jerusalem, followed by the Byzantines, then the Muslims under the auspices of the Arabs, Mamelukes or the Turks. The European Crusaders controlled Jerusalem for 100 years and other parts of the biblical lands for another 100 years. For most of the nineteenth century, the land of

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

Israel was under some type of Muslim control. But in the twentieth century things have changed remarkably. Jews by the millions have returned to the land of Canaan, and Israel is once again a nation, as precisely foretold by the prophets:

Ezek. 37:21

21 Thus saith the Lord God: Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the nations, to which they are gone, and will gather them on every side, and bring them into their own land.

Modern Israel has fought four major wars during the last sixty years. All of these wars challenged Israel's survival. But God miraculously protected His chosen nation from every satanic effort to destroy it. We must recognize the supernatural background behind this formidable struggle, in order to interpret it from a biblical viewpoint.

For the past 100 years, God providentially arranged for the restoration of the nation of Israel. Satan has fought this biblically prophesied restoration, through death camps of Nazi Germany, fanatical wars and terrorism. During the Holocaust of World War II, the Nazis killed about one-third of the world's population of Jews. The Nazis called it, "The Final Solution" and their goal was to kill all Jews. Winston Churchill, former prime minister of England, said: "The Final Solution is probably the greatest, most horrible crime ever committed in the whole history of the world."

The fury of satan to stop this restoration of the Jews to their Promised Land matched what he did to prevent the first restoration under Moses and Joshua.

The Latter Israel More Powerful Than the Former

Many prophecies cite the restoration of the nation of Israel, a people persecuted, slaughtered and dispersed for almost two millennia. Many books have been written regarding this miraculous restoration and rebuilding. Only two of these prophecies will be summarized here.

-- From 100Prophecies.org

Bible passage: Jeremiah 16:14-15

Written: sometime from 626 to about 586 BC

Fulfilled: 1948

However, the days are coming, declares the Lord, when men will no longer say, "As surely as the Lord lives, who brought the Israelites up out of Egypt," but they will say, "As surely as the Lord lives, who brought the Israelites up out of the land of the north and out of all the countries where he had banished them." For I will restore them to the land I gave their forefathers. NIV

In Jeremiah 16:14-15, the prophet said the second Israel would be more impressive than the first. In many regards, it is. The first time that Israel was established as a country was after Moses led the descendants of Jacob (typically referred to today as Jews) out of Egypt, where they had been enslaved for 400 years. They then conquered Canaan and established Israel about 3,400 years ago. But the second time that Israel was established was after the Jews had been scattered for a few thousand years. This time the Jews had to return from as far away as the United States, China, Russia and South Africa.

Bible passage: Deuteronomy 30:3-5

Written: perhaps 1400 BC

Fulfilled: 1948 - 2007

Then the Lord your God will restore your fortunes and have compassion on you and gather you again from all the nations where he scattered you. Even if you have been banished to the

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

most distant land under the heavens, from there the Lord your God will gather you and bring you back. He will bring you to the land that belonged to your fathers, and you will take possession of it. He will make you more prosperous and numerous than your fathers.

In Deuteronomy 30:3-5, the Bible said the Jews would be scattered worldwide and that they later would return to their homeland and have their fortunes restored. This prophecy began to be fulfilled in modern times during the late 1800s when many Jews returned to Israel, from as far away as China and the United States, Russia and South Africa. Israel declared independence in 1948. Today, Israel is among the world's most prosperous countries. In 1999, for example, Israel's per capita Gross Domestic Product was twice as prosperous as the neighboring countries.¹

4.2 Decline and Restoration of the Church

The New Testament church is a spiritual nation comprised of God's chosen people. New Testament church events have paralleled the events of the nation of Israel throughout the past 2,000 years:

- The dispersion of the Jews by the end of the first century.
- The Dark Ages for the Jewish people, with terrible persecution and worldwide suffering.
- The beginning of restoration in the early 1900s began with the Balfour Declaration favoring the establishment of a Jewish national home in Palestine.
- The miraculous survival against overwhelming odds with victory in numerous wars over their enemies.
- The desert land of Israel has blossomed like a rose.
- Israel is a powerful nation that continues to thrive in a hostile environment.

Refer to Chart B-5, "Restoration -- The History of the Nation of Israel and the Church", in Appendix 1.

Decline of the Church

Following the outpouring of the Holy Ghost on the Day of Pentecost described in the second chapter of the book of Acts, the church was infused with power, boldness and fervor that propelled them into action -- spreading the Gospel of Jesus Christ. The book of Acts, documenting the history of this early church, records many signs and wonders accompanied by many conversions.

At the same time, great persecution came against the church and many were martyred for their belief in Jesus Christ. From 64 A.D. to the third century, Nero killed many Christians. Emperor after emperor tortured and martyred them also. During this time, 100,000 spectators at a time in the Roman coliseum witnessed the death of thousands of Christians. This persecution did not stop the Gospel, but spread it to all parts of the known world.

When satan could not stop the Gospel with persecution from outside the church, he devised another plan to destroy it from within -- with the introduction of false doctrine. At first, these changes were only small deviations. But, they grew and developed, until there was very little resemblance between what the church was in the first century and what it became during this time in church history.

As false doctrine was introduced, the church continued to decline bringing in the period called the Dark Ages. Some historians say it lasted for 1,000 years.

Entire books have been written regarding the decline and reformation of the church. The following is briefly summarized to review the reformation and the ongoing process of restoration.

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

Restoration of the Church

The Old Testament primarily relates physical concepts -- physical kingdoms, physical warfare, etc., while the New Testament deals with spiritual concepts -- spiritual kingdoms, spiritual warfare, etc.

Old Testament Physical Concepts	New Testament Spiritual Concepts
Physical nation (Israel)	Spiritual nation (the church)
Physical priesthood	Spiritual priesthood
Physical anointing	Spiritual anointing
Physical warfare	Spiritual warfare
Physical sacrifices of animals	Spiritual sacrifices
Physical tabernacle	Spiritual tabernacle
God's laws written on physical tables of stone	God's laws written on tables of the heart

- **The central object of the Old Testament is Israel, a physical kingdom -- God's chosen people.**
- **The central object of the New Testament is the New Testament church, a spiritual kingdom -- God's called and chosen people.**
- **God's greatest design and greatest creation, His masterpiece, is the New Testament church which He purchased with His own blood.**
- **This called-out Body, the church comprised of born-again believers, is the highest entity of God's creation -- superior to all the universe, angels, and kingdoms of the earth.**

The divine plan of God:

- Brought restoration of Israel to its current status as a powerful nation.
- Is bringing restoration of the church to the power and evangelism of the first century church, described in the book of Acts.

The complete fulfillment of these two events will usher in the very soon second coming of Jesus Christ.

The Protestant Reformation

Some church historians mark the beginning of the Protestant Reformation in 1517, when Martin Luther penned 95 statements protesting the sale of indulgences by the Catholic church. With these indulgences, one could receive pardon for all sins without confession or repentance. Others who were instrumental in the reformation of the church include such men as: John Calvin (1536), John Knox (1560), Thomas Cartwright (1567), Jonathan Edwards (1734), George Whitefield (1736), John Wesley (1784), Charles Finney (1821), Charles Spurgeon (1859), and D. L. Moody (1865).

The Twentieth Century and Restoration

The greatest milestone and phenomenon of the restoration of the church was at the turn of the last century, January 1, 1901.

-- From Search for Truth Home Bible Study

1901 -- Topeka, Kansas

Charles Parham's desire to search the Word and deepen his consecration led to the opening of a Bible school in October 1900. Forty students joined him to discover more truth. A question arose among the students about the second chapter of Acts. Was the Holy Ghost baptism always accompanied by speaking with other tongues? Was the tongues experience still available?

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

After prayerful study, the group concluded that speaking with other tongues always accompanied the Holy Spirit baptism in the New Testament.

A few days before the end of 1900, day and night services were held at the Bible school. For the first time, they began seeking the baptism of the Holy Ghost -- expecting to speak with other tongues! Then on New Year's Day, 1901, it happened!

Student Agnes Ozman asked her instructor to lay hands upon her that she might receive the Holy Spirit. As Parham prayed, she began to speak with other tongues with floods of joy and laughter.

By the third day, many had received like experiences. No two were talking the same language and no one understood the other's speech. Twelve ministers of different faiths were among those baptized in the Spirit.

Reporters came from Topeka, Kansas City, St. Louis, and other cities, along with professors, linguists, foreigners, and government interpreters.

This was certainly not the first time believers had received the gift of the Holy Spirit. But it was the first time in the modern era that believers sought to receive the Holy Ghost with the expectation of speaking in other tongues!

News of this phenomenon spread far and wide. Crowds came to hear Parham and his workers preach. Kansas City, Lawrence, Galena, Melrose, and other towns soon were visited with the fiery Holy Ghost phenomenon. In Galena, Kansas, prominent citizens were healed of blindness, cancer, and other diseases.

Hundreds were converted and baptized. From Galena it spread to Joplin and Baxter Springs, Missouri. Then to Texas. Orchard, a small town forty-five miles from Houston, became the birthplace of the Texas outpouring.

1905 -- Houston, Texas

In July 1905, Parham and a group of twenty-five workers arrived in Houston. For five weeks they preached on the streets and house to house, meeting in a rented hall for the evening services. As large numbers received the baptism, revival spread to surrounding communities.

When the need for training became apparent, a Bible school was opened in Houston in December 1905. One of the students, W. J. Seymour, a black Holiness preacher, was intrigued by this unique Spirit-outpouring. Then in 1906, he was invited to hold a meeting in Los Angeles.

1906 -- Azusa Street

Seymour's first text was the second chapter of Acts. Although he had not yet received the Holy Ghost baptism, he preached that speaking in tongues was the gift's scriptural evidence. A wave of protest was ignited! When Seymour returned for the afternoon service, the door was locked. His unique message was unwelcome! Homeless and penniless, Seymour was invited to the home of a sympathetic onlooker. After several days of prayer meetings, people became hungry for God's blessings.

On April 9, 1906, six people were gloriously filled with the Holy Ghost. For three days and nights, hundreds pushed into the little house to see what was happening, because it had been reported that God's presence was great among this group of sincere people. The city was stirred! As the people came, they were captivated by the power and many were healed of terminal diseases.

On April 12, 1906, Seymour was baptized with the Holy Ghost. The house actually shook under the violent praising of a hungry people. Soon the great crowds required larger accommodations. Services were moved to a former Methodist church on Azusa Street. For three years, this two-story frame

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

building housed a mighty revival. For three years the revival continued day and night.

From all over the world they came. Missionaries from other countries returned to America to find out about this new experience. From the British Isles, Sweden, Scandinavian countries, and across Europe . . . people came to investigate the strange phenomenon on Azusa Street!²

It is the Endtime -- Time for the Completion of Restoration

God created the world in six days and rested on the seventh (the Sabbath). He set in motion 6,000 years as the period for man's day. Approximately 4,000 years (four great days) passed before God robed Himself in flesh, walked on this earth for 33 years, suffered and died for our sins, and then ascended into heaven. Approximately 2,000 years (two great days), since the birth of the church on the Day of Pentecost have elapsed. We now stand at the end of the sixth day -- at the week's end of human history. Morning of the seventh day will break upon a new millennia:

- Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ
- Thousand years of peace
- Sabbath of the World
- Restoration of the earth to the Garden of Eden state

Jesus Christ came to this world, ascended into heaven and He will return when restoration is complete -- "the restitution of all things."

Acts 3:20-21

20 And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you:

*21 Whom the heaven must receive **until the times of restitution of all things**, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began.*

*21 Whom heaven must receive [and retain] **until the time for the complete restoration** of all that God spoke by the mouth of all His*

holy prophets for ages past [from the most ancient time in the memory of man]. AMP

*21 For the time being he must remain out of sight in heaven until **everything is restored to order** again just the way God, through the preaching of his holy prophets of old, said it would be. MSG*

It is God's will for us to be a part of the restoration of His church, involving ourselves in a dominion role in this last day harvest. We must be willing to go into new places in the Spirit beyond where we have ever been. We must:

1. Be led and empowered by the Spirit.
2. Elevate God and His business to the highest priority until it becomes our chief joy.
3. Passionately and urgently pursue restoration to become a book of Acts Christian.

1. We must be led and empowered by the Spirit.

To be led by the Spirit we must allow the Spirit to:

- Be more dominant in our lives through a **closer relationship** with God.
- Lead us into a **greater dominion role** in doing God's will and work.

God only claims us as sons if we allow His Spirit to lead us. The Spirit will always take us further into His purpose, will and work.

Rom. 8:14

*14 For as many as are **led by the Spirit of God**, they are the sons of God.*

14 God's Spirit beckons. There are things to do and places to go! BCL

Gal. 5:25

*25 If we are living now by the Holy Spirit's power, let us **follow the Holy Spirit's leading in every part of our lives.** TLB*

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

As we are led by the Spirit, we will be **sent** to fulfill the mission that Jesus Christ began in His earthly ministry and declared in His first sermon text from Isaiah 61:1 (recorded in Luke 4:18). When the Spirit sends us, He will also **anoint** us with divine ability to do His will. Like Jesus, we will be anointed and sent.

Luke 4:18-19

*18 The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath **anointed me** to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath **sent me** to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised,*

19 To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

Restoration is all about the working of God's Spirit through His church and His people (as sons of God) with miracles, signs and wonders. When God partners with man in His supernatural work, He bypasses man's natural abilities. His Spirit resident in the believer accomplishes the supernatural work. Apostle Paul declares: "*I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.*" This is discussed in Section I, Chapter 3.2, "Son of God - Supernatural Abilities".

Zech. 4:6

6 Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, saith the Lord of hosts.

Refer to the following charts in Appendix 1:

Chart F-1 The Path to the Supernatural Through the Core Ministry of the Church

Chart F-7 What Hinders the Supernatural -- Flow To Vs. Flow Through

2. We must elevate God and His business to the highest priority in our lives until it becomes our chief joy.

Something in the heart of most Jewish people is not complete outside the Promised Land. Likewise, with the Kingdom of God, His church must occupy the highest position and priority in our lives. It must be our greatest joy -- **our chief joy**.

King David, the man after God's own heart, penned an eternal truth that remains after three millennia: **to please God we must make Jerusalem, Zion, His Kingdom, His church, our chief joy**.

King David is referring to a time when the Israelites were prisoners of war in Babylon. They were captives far away from their homeland seemingly with no possibility of returning.

Ps. 137:1, 5, 6

1 By the rivers of Babylon, there we sat down, yea, we wept, when we remembered Zion.

5 If I forget you, O Jerusalem, let my right hand forget its skill [with the harp].

6 Let my tongue cleave to the roof of my mouth if I remember you not, if I prefer not Jerusalem above my chief joy! AMP

Ps. 137:5-6

5 If I forget you, O Jerusalem, let my right hand forget its skill upon the harp.

6 If I fail to love her more than my highest joy, let me never sing again. TLB

-- From Barnes' Notes

[If I prefer not Jerusalem] literally, "If I do not cause to ascend." That is, if I do not exalt Jerusalem in my estimation above everything that gives me pleasure; if I do not find my supreme happiness in that.

[Above my chief joy] Margin, as in Hebrew, the head of my joy. The chief thing which gives me joy; as the head is the chief, or is supreme over the body. There are other sources of

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

joy which are not in any way inconsistent with the kingdom of God: the joy of friendship; of domestic life; of honorable pursuits of the esteem of people. So of music, the arts, gardens, literature, science. But when one interferes with the other, or is inconsistent with the other, the joy of the world is to be sacrificed to the joy of God's kingdom. When the joy of God's kingdom is sacrificed for the joy of the world, it proves that there is no true piety in the soul. The kingdom of God must always be supreme.³

- **Jerusalem or Zion to us in the New Testament church is the Kingdom of God and it must always be our first priority -- our chief joy.**
- **Only strong Christians will experience the completed work of restoration. To be strong Christians, we must be joyful because “*The joy of the Lord is our strength*” (Neh. 8:10).**
- **When the work and will of God become our chief joy, it will occupy the highest priority in our lives -- positioning us to partner with Him in the supernatural.**

The Father's business is unlike any other. His business enterprise surpasses all others. There is no comparison to another, because His Kingdom is on a different plane. The Kingdom of God, to which every believer is a part, holds a place in time and importance that every other kingdom, past, present, and future pales in comparison.

We should determine that we will stand at the Judgment having been as dedicated to the Father's business as we were to the business of our kingdom. May we have the testimony of Apostle Paul -- I have given my best to the Father's business: “*For I am already being poured out like a drink offering . . . I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith*” (2 Tim. 4:6 NIV). His entire life had been poured out for the sake of Christ, now with a little left, he is giving the rest -- giving it all.

3. We must passionately and urgently pursue restoration as a book of Acts Christian.

The simple requirement for the church to be restored is for born-again Christians to become book of Acts Christians. This is a continuous process -- becoming partakers of His divine nature.

- Spiritual growth at the individual level will result in church growth at the corporate level.
- Evangelism at the personal level will result in evangelism at the corporate level.

-- From Author Unknown

The Word of God gives a promise that the latter house will be greater than the former. The former house is the early church that we are to be restored to. And according to His promise, the restoration of the “temple made without hands” that the Lord has allowed us to build, will be built. Jesus is the Master Builder and we are the workmen.

If He will not use us, He will use others but it will be built and restored to its former glory. The Old Testament history of the restoration of the temple at Jerusalem is given as an example for us, a blueprint and plumb line.⁴

The choice is ours today -- the last days before the coming of Jesus Christ:

- We can become satisfied with the status quo and fail to be a part of what God is doing in the restoration of His church,
- Or, we can urgently and passionately pursue a deeper relationship with God and become a book of Acts Christian significantly affecting our lost world with God’s supernatural power working in us and through us.

Pursuing the path of restoration and a book of Acts Christian may not be an issue affecting our salvation, but it is for our lost world. If we fall short of God’s plan of restoration, precious souls may be lost.

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

The last day church, just before the coming of Jesus Christ, will not be weak and ineffective in a survival mode. But God's promise of restoration will be fulfilled. His church will be at the zenith of its power and glory involved in revival and evangelism -- with miracles and signs exceeding that of the first century church. If we diligently desire and pursue the will of God, we can be a part of God's plan of restoration.

Jesus Christ is coming back after a powerfully restored church:

- A holy church.
- A glorious church.
- A triumphant church.
- A revival church involved in evangelizing the world with the Gospel of Jesus Christ.
- A church with saints demonstrating the supernatural power of its Master Designer and Builder -- a supernatural God.

Eph. 5:25-27

*25. . . Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it;
26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water
by the word,*

*27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not
having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be
holy and without blemish.*

- **May all of us as born-again believers renew our commitment to becoming book of Acts Christians. For the rest of our lifetime, may we devote ourselves to searching out and doing God's will -- that in our lives, God's will may be done on earth as it is in heaven.**

5. Miraculous Results of Restoration

Among the most miraculous events in the Bible, was a story of restoration occurring after Israel began to pursue the purpose of God -- restoration to the land of their forefathers. That miraculous conversion was concerning Rahab, the harlot who lived on the wall of Jericho.

Rahab's house was on the outer wall which was a part of their defense system. To live on the wall possibly meant that society did not regard her highly. She would be one of the first killed if the enemy attacked the city. Perhaps it was the city signifying to her, "We don't think much of you -- you are nothing but a prostitute."

This 40 foot high and 30 foot wide wall separated Rahab from society. Separating her from the city, the wall had stood for many years. But worse yet were the walls of sin that held her captive by rejection from society, loneliness, hopelessness and despair.

The Bible doesn't tell us, but could it be that Rahab cried out to the God of Israel, and He sent the spies to her house for her deliverance? God will go to any extent to save those who sincerely cry to Him. Our God can restore fallen man, and demolish walls holding him captive in sin and despair. God is a God of miraculous restoration.

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

The scarlet cord hanging from her window was more than just scarlet thread. It was a symbol of the blood of Jesus that would bring restoration and salvation 1,500 years later. Apostle Paul states in *Eph. 2:13-16*: “*But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ. For he hath **broken down the middle wall of partition** between us; that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross.*”

On one side of the wall, Rahab was a harlot. But when she was restored and the wall of separation removed, we see her as the grandmother of King David. The prophet said, “I see something coming out of the lineage of David, I see the Christ, the Messiah, coming out of the tribe of Judah.” Fifteen hundred years later, Rahab became the great, great, great . . . grandmother of Jesus Christ.

Rahab was restored from a hopeless, hated prostitute to the lineage of King David and King Jesus. This resulted when Israel finally got tired of the wilderness living and pursued God’s will for restoration to the land of their forefathers.

When Israel was restored, it made possible the restoration of Rahab from a prostitute to the lineage of Jesus Christ.

Had Israel never experienced restoration to the land of Canaan, Rahab would have died without the miraculous testimony of restoration from a harlot to the bloodline of Jesus Christ.

A similar story in the New Testament describes the woman at the well of Samaria. Jesus had said, “*I must needs go through Samaria*”. The disciples probably said, “Let’s bypass Samaria”, because the Samaritans were outcasts. They hated, and were hated by the Jews.

Miraculous Results of Restoration

In this setting, Jesus was saying: I must go to Samaria because people there are separated by a giant wall. It was not a physical wall like Jericho, but one just as isolating -- an ethnic wall with Samaritans hated by both Jews and Gentiles. There lived a woman needing restoration, someone hated by her own nationality in her own city.

The woman at the well was separated by walls of sin, abuse, rejection, loneliness and hopelessness -- much like Rahab. And Jesus purposed to go there to set someone free, to restore someone who had fallen. Someone without hope was crying to a God she did not know. When Jesus ministered to the woman at the well with a message of hope for restoration, her testimony brought out the whole city to see and hear Him.

If there was hope for Rahab, and if there was hope for the harlot of Samaria who met Jesus at the well; there is hope for those in our cities who are separated by walls of sin, abuse, addiction, sickness, hopelessness, despair and torment. They all have insurmountable problems with no apparent hope of deliverance.

There are people like Rahab and the woman at the well who cried in their homes last night in our city -- crying to a God that they do not know. They are crying for something to ease their unbearable pain and endless misery.

Our loving God is listening to their cries and He is calling His church to a dimension of restoration that will bring these people a miracle of restoration.

- **Restoration of born-again Christians to Apostolic ministry will bring restoration to those in our cities who are separated from God by walls of sin, abuse and hopeless despair.**

RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY

There is hope for the most hopeless people in society. It doesn't matter their dilemma, where they've been or what they've done. No situation is too extreme or wall too high, that God cannot reach, deliver and restore. Our God is awesome. He is a God with tremendous compassion, love and everlasting mercy -- a God of restoration.

- **Our God is a God of restoration -- miraculous restoration.**

III.
fundamentals
for Growth in Our
Partnership With God

"It is totally abnormal for a born-again, New Testament Christian not to possess an appetite for the supernatural. It is not right, it is not normal, because you have God's DNA inside of you. You have His divine nature in you. He is a miracle looking to happen through you."

Rev. Jeff Arnold

Overview

Conversion can be viewed as a **straight line** with four sequential steps which can happen in one day:

**(1) Believing + (2) Repentance + (3) Baptism
+ (4) Receiving the Gift of the Holy Ghost = Conversion**

But growing in our partnership with God must be viewed as a **circle**, a lifetime of **repeated cycles of continuous change and growth**. As disciples of Jesus Christ, we are called to a life of constant renewal, revival and growth as we assume more of the divine nature of our supernatural God. It is our heavenly Father's greatest desire for His sons to partner with Him in His supernatural business. Anything less will not be effective in bringing deliverance, healing and salvation to our desperately lost world. This is discussed in Section I, sub-chapters 2.3 "Duplicate the Ministry of Christ" and 3.2 "Son of God -- Supernatural Abilities".

The purpose of this section is not to provide a simple seven step formula for working with God in the supernatural. It is a summary of some of the related fundamental biblical themes or concepts that we should study and embrace to grow in our partnership with God. These concepts should be repeated in a continuous cycle as we mature and become more like our heavenly Father.

A part of this process is living near the cross and dying daily to self, so that more of Christ can live in us: “*He must increase, but I must decrease*”.

1. Growing in Love for God: Love is the foundational theme of the entire Bible. Everything we do in the Kingdom of God is effective only if it is driven by our love for God, which in turn will be reflected in our actions of love for others.

Our sacrifices (prayer, fasting, service, etc.) will be effective, and accepted by God if motivated by our love for Him vs. other forces such as: guilt, fear, condemnation, recognition, ritual, routine, etc. To progress in our Christian walk we must have a growing personal relationship with God (a personal God) based on our free will and love.

- **Love must be the foundation and motive for every Christian concept and action (obedience, burden, prayer, fasting, service, anointing, spiritual gifts, etc.).**

In First Corinthians chapters 12 and 13 Apostle Paul refers to the necessity of love for the spiritual gifts to work properly. He concludes the chapter with: “*And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity [love].*” In writing to the Galatians he stresses the relationship of faith and love: “*For [if we are] in Christ Jesus, neither circumcision nor uncircumcision counts for anything, but only **faith activated and energized and expressed and working through love***” (Gal. 5:6).
AMP

2. Growing in Obedience: Jesus said in *John 14:15* “*If ye love me, keep my commandments.*” Love is the oil that greases the wheels of obedience. Obedience to God’s Word proves our love to Him. Without proper love for God, we will not be completely obedient to God’s will.

3. Growing in Burden: What we do for God must be driven by a burden (vision). Our sacrifice of service in reaching the lost will

be effective only when driven by a burden for others and the burden of the Lord.

4. Growing in Sacrifice: The life of a Christian is to be one of sacrifice, “taking up our cross and following Him.” Love, obedience and burden will cause us to willingly sacrifice for the Father’s business. Conversely, when there is not obedience to God’s Word, it is of no value -- “*Obedience is better than sacrifice.*” **Sacrifice preceded anointing** in the Old Testament, with a sacrifice being offered before the anointing of a king.

5. Growing in Anointing: Anointing is God’s divine ability working through man to do His work. Such anointing is a prerequisite for him to partner with God in His supernatural work.

6. Growing in Charity: Charity is love in action to those in need. True charity has two components: compassion (emotion) and care (action). Repeatedly before Jesus performed a miracle, it was recorded: “*He was moved with compassion toward them, and He healed their sick*”; “*He had compassion on them, and touched their eyes.*”

7. Growing in Spiritual Gifts: The gifts of the Spirit flow through the charity channel. First Corinthians Chapter 12 describes the gifts of the Spirit. But the next chapter declares that without charity, these gifts are unprofitable. The miracle-working faith required for the supernatural is powerless without love: “*Faith which worketh by love*” (Gal. 5:6). God places His power in the hands of love, for that is the only place it will not be misused.

Working in isolation, there will not be continued growth in these foundational elements since they must work together. For example, our love for God will stagnate if we lack compassion for others. As we carry out actions of charity to our neighbor, our love for God will increase. And as our love for God increases, so will our compassion and care for others.

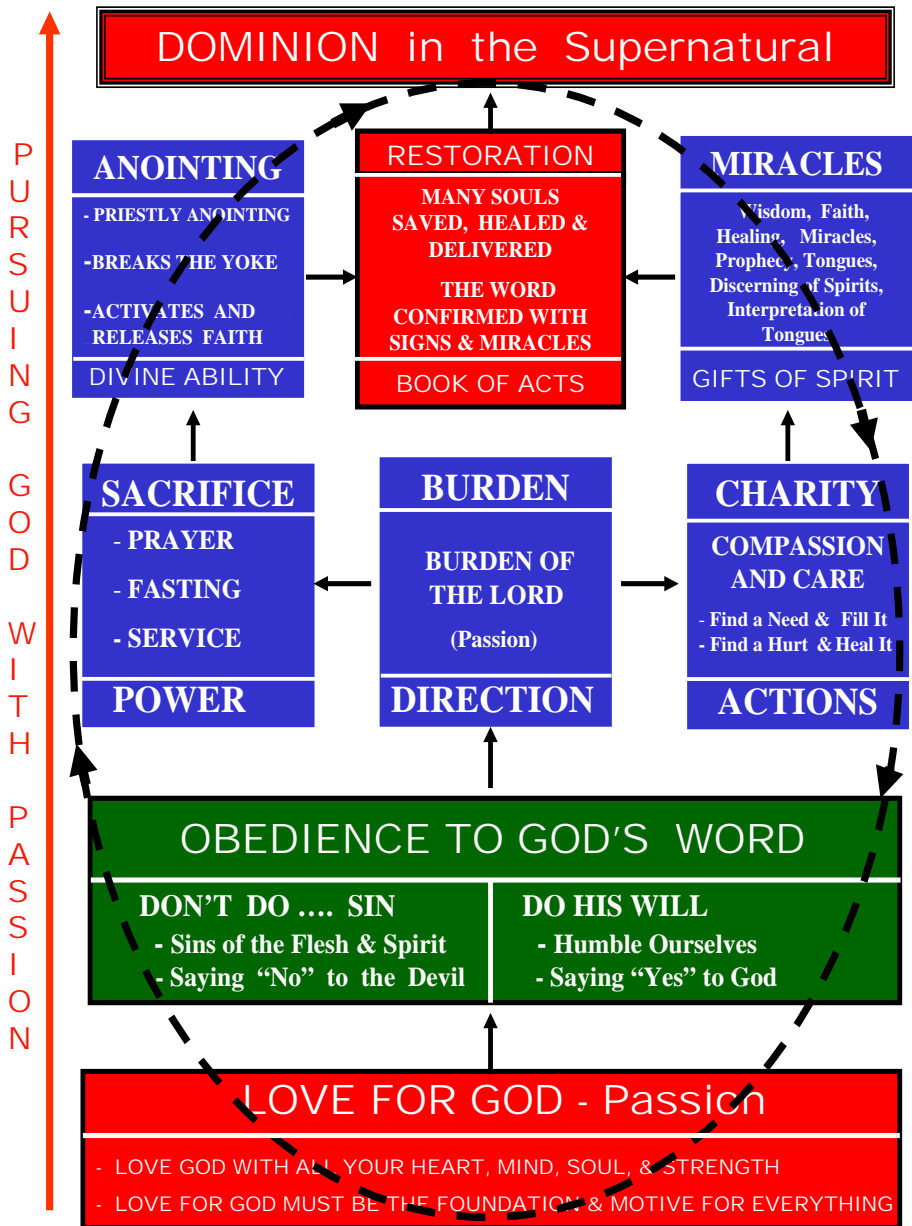
The three key elements upon which the others operate are: love for God, obedience to the will of God, and the burden of the Lord reflected in our passion to do His work:

- None of the above principles will work in our life without a true love for God.
- God will not bless our sacrificial efforts in His Kingdom if we are disobedient to His Word and His will.
- Our work in the Kingdom will be ineffective unless it is motivated by a burden.

Charts B-1a and B-1b, on the following pages, describe how these foundational elements work together and complement each other.

Too many Christians settle for experiencing a single dimension of these concepts. But our heavenly Father's greatest desire is for us to pursue **continuous cycles** of spiritual growth -- partnering with Him in the supernatural.

Chart B-1a



Fundamental truths comprise the foundation upon which others operate and are supported.

This continuous cycle should be more than repetitious, but with each repeated cycle, we should experience a greater depth of these fundamental biblical truths.

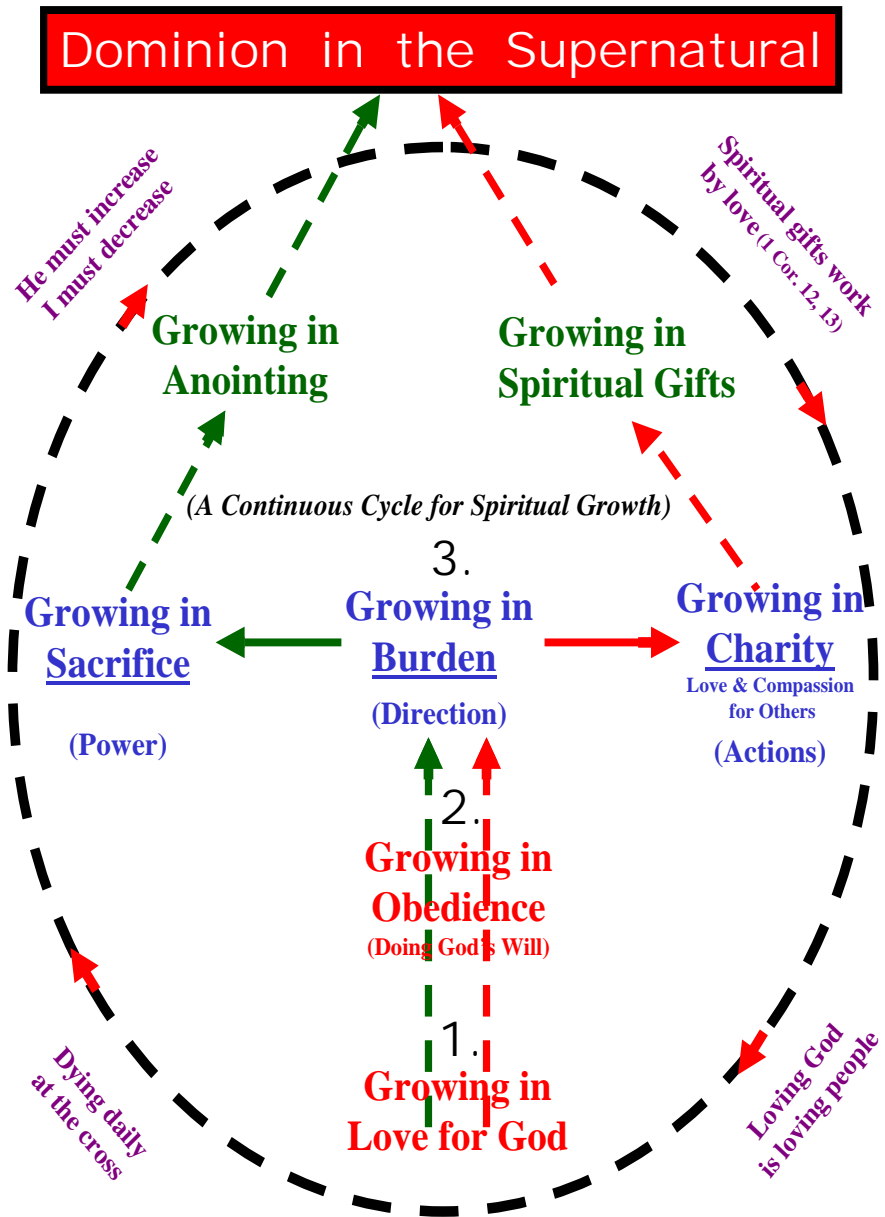
- As we know God and **love** Him more, we will be more **obedient**, as His will unfolds in an increasing revelation.
- As we are obedient to **His will**, we will experience an ever increasing **burden** for others.
- Such **burden** will increase feelings of **compassion** for and **actions of charity** to help people in need.
- An increased **burden** will motivate us to greater **sacrifice** in intercessory prayer, fasting and service.
- Increased **sacrifice** will intensify **anointing** in God's calling.
- Increased compassion and actions of **charity** will prepare the way for the **gifts of the Spirit** to operate.

As this cycle is repeated, there will be a memorial of **love, obedience, burden, charity** and **sacrifice** built to God until the anointing (God's ability) and the gifts of the Spirit pour out of our lives. Only this kind of supernatural power working in our lives will significantly affect our lost world:

- Bringing healing, deliverance and salvation to the lost.
- Destroying the powers of satan that bind our generation.

Entire books could be written about each of these concepts. The purpose of the following chapters is to summarize the concepts and show their interrelationships in a continuous cycle of growing in our partnership with God.

Chart B-1b



- Love for God must be the foundation & motive for everything

*When we love Jesus Christ with all our heart, soul and
mind -- with true agape love:*

- We love to walk with Him; we love to talk to Him.*
 - We love to work for Him; we love to go to His house.*
 - We love to read about Him; we love to think about Him.*
 - We love to sacrifice for Him and willingly carry our cross.*
 - We love His lost children -- even those treating us wrong.*
-

1. *Growing in Love for God*

The scribes were scholars who devoted themselves to legalistic study of the Law. Sometimes they were called lawyers, doctors or teachers. At the time of Jesus' ministry, the Ten Commandments had proliferated to 613 commandments -- 248 "thou shall" and 365 "thou shall not". One of the scribes, a lawyer asked Jesus: "**Master, which is the great commandment in the law?**" (Matt. 22:36)

1.1 The Greatest Commandment

Matt. 22:37-40

37 *Jesus replied, "**Love the Lord your God** with all your heart, soul, and mind."*

38 *This is the first and **greatest commandment**.*

39 *The second most important is similar: "**Love your neighbor as much as you love yourself.**"*

40 *All the other commandments and all the demands of the prophets stem from these two laws and are fulfilled if you obey them. **Keep only these and you will find that you are obeying all the others.** TLB*

God's Kingdom and Christian living are summed up in these two commandments. This mighty ocean of God's love is infinite, encompassing all that God requires of man. We should launch out

and sail upon it. It is endless -- carrying us around this world and to the one beyond.

Mark 12:29-30

*29 And Jesus answered him, the first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; the Lord our God is **one Lord**:*

*30 And thou **shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.***

The key word here is “**all**”. In effect, our Lord commands that we give Him, the **one true God**, everything -- all of our being, devoted to loving and serving Him.

-- **From Matthew Henry’s Commentary**

Love is the leading affection of the soul; the love of God is the leading grace in the renewed soul. Where this is not true, nothing else that is good is done, or done aright, or accepted, or done long. Loving God with all our heart, will effectually take us off from, and arm us against, all those things that are rivals with him for the throne in our souls, and will engage us to everything by which he may be honored, and with which he will be pleased.

No commandment will be grievous where this principle commands, and has the ascendant. In Mark, our Saviour prefixes to this command the great doctrinal truth upon which it is built (v. 29); Hear, O Israel, The Lord our God is one Lord; if we firmly believe this, it will follow, that we shall love him with all our heart. He is Jehovah, who has all amiable perfections in himself; he is our God, to whom we stand related and obliged; and therefore we ought to love him, to set our affections on him, and take a delight in him. He is one Lord, therefore he must be loved with our whole heart; he has the sole right to us, and therefore ought to have the sole possession of us. If he be one, our hearts must be one with

him, and since there is no God besides, no rival must be admitted with him upon the throne.¹

Our Lord's request for 100% of our love and devotion is reasonable.

Rom. 12:1

*I I appeal to you therefore, brethren, and beg of you in view of [all] the mercies of God, to make a decisive dedication of your bodies [presenting **all your members and faculties**] as a living sacrifice, holy (devoted, consecrated) and well pleasing to God, which is your **reasonable** (rational, intelligent) **service** and spiritual worship. AMP*

-- From The Biblical Illustrator

Because many deceive themselves in thinking that they love God, when they do not, it is needful to set down the marks of the true love of God, by which we may ascertain whether it be in us or not. The principal are these:

1. A deliberate preferring and esteeming of God above all things in the world, though ever so excellent or dear to us.
2. A desire to be united and joined to God in most near communion with Him, both in this life and the next.
3. A high estimation of the special tokens and pledges of God's love to us.
4. A conscientious care to obey God's will, and to serve and honor Him in our calling.
5. Joy and delight in the duties of God's service and worship.
6. Zeal for God's glory, causing in us a holy grief and indignation when we see or hear that God is dishonored by sin.
7. Love is bountiful, making us willing and ready to give and bestow much upon the person we love.
8. True love to the saints and children of God (*saved and lost*).² (G. Petter)

1.2 Loving God is Putting Him First

Jesus' answer to the rich young ruler's question, "*What shall I do to inherit eternal life?*" was, "*Sell all that thou hast, and give to the poor.*" This meant: **give up your idols**, because his idols were his possessions. God demands the same of us -- give up our idols. Anything we love more than God is our idol, making us idolaters. Such idols must be destroyed to make Jesus first in our lives. No man can serve two masters. The Lord is a jealous God. He has such love for us that He will not tolerate a greater love in our life. To love God with a divided heart is not acceptable and He considers it like not loving Him at all.

Ex. 34:14

14 You must worship no other gods, for the Lord, whose very name is Jealous, is a God who is jealous about his relationship with you.
NLT

King Solomon let the love of wealth, honor and women supersede his love for God. He amassed great fame and fortune. In the eyes of the world, he would be considered extremely successful, having climbed the ladder of success to the highest pinnacle. But at the end of his life, as he surveyed his accomplishments, he discovered that his ladder was leaning against the wrong wall. And he cried out in despair -- *all is vanity*.

All is vanity compared to loving God and serving Him alone. It is vanity to seek and trust in perishable riches. It is vanity to seek high honor. It is vanity to follow fleshly desires while neglecting the eternal issues of life that flow from loving God.

Eccl. 2:4-11, 17

4 I made me great works; I builded me houses; I planted me vineyards:

5 I made me gardens and orchards, and I planted trees in them of all kind of fruits:

6 I made me pools of water, to water therewith the wood that bringeth forth trees:

7 I got me servants and maidens, and had servants born in my house; also I had great possessions of great and small cattle above all that were in Jerusalem before me:

8 I gathered me also silver and gold, and the peculiar treasure of kings and of the provinces: I gat me men singers and women singers, and the delights of the sons of men, as musical instruments, and that of all sorts.

9 So I was great, and increased more than all that were before me in Jerusalem: also my wisdom remained with me.

10 And whatsoever mine eyes desired I kept not from them, I withheld not my heart from any joy; for my heart rejoiced in all my labour: and this was my portion of all my labour.

*11 Then I looked on all the works that my hands had wrought, and on the labour that I had laboured to do: and, behold, **all was vanity and vexation of spirit**, and there was no profit under the sun.*

*17 Therefore I hated life; because the work that is wrought under the sun is grievous unto me: for **all is vanity and vexation of spirit**.*

King Solomon's admonition is forever etched in the stone of eternity -- **"Wealth, fame and fortune is vanity"**. May we grasp this message and live our lives so that nothing would overshadow our love for God.

God demands our love for Him to be greater than for our family. Jesus stressed that love for home or family must never compete with our love for Him. If our love for anything ever exceeds our love for Him, it must be set aside for the greater cause of Jesus Christ.

Luke 14:26

26 If anyone comes to Me and does not hate his [own] father and mother [in the sense of indifference to or relative disregard for them in comparison with his attitude toward God] and [likewise] his wife and children and brothers and sisters — [yes] and even his own life also — he cannot be My disciple. AMP

-- From Matthew Henry's Commentary

Every good man loves his relations; and yet, if he be a disciple of Christ, he must comparatively hate them, must love them less than Christ. Not that their persons must be in any degree hated, but our comfort and satisfaction in them must be lost and swallowed up in our love to Christ.

When our duty to our parents comes in competition with our evident duty to Christ, we must give Christ the preference. If we must either deny Christ or be banished from our families and relations (as many of the primitive Christians were), we must rather lose their society than his favor.

Every man loves his own life, no man ever yet hated it; and we cannot be Christ's disciples if we do not love him better than our own lives, so as rather to have our lives embittered by cruel bondage, nay, and taken away by cruel deaths, than to dishonor Christ, or depart from any of his truths and ways.¹

When choosing between God and relatives, God must come first. Abraham had to leave his family and his father's house (*Gen. 12:1-3*). He also had to send his son Ishmael away (*Gen. 21:8-13*). He had to be willing to sacrifice his son Isaac (*Gen. 22:1-19*).

When we love Jesus Christ with all our heart, soul and mind with true agape love:

- We love to talk to Him.
- We love to work for Him.
- We love to walk with Him.
- We love to read about Him.
- We love to hear about Him.
- We love to go to His house.
- We love to think about Him.
- We exercise self-denial to serve Him.

Growing in Love for God

- We find supreme satisfaction in His service.
- We love His lost children -- even those treating us wrong.

When our ardent, agape love for Christ subsides:

- The Bible is neglected.
- Witnessing and soul winning cease.
- Selfishness replaces sacrifice and self-denial.
- Church service attendance is neglected or becomes mechanical.
- Prayer becomes a form of survival (for self) instead of revival prayers (for the lost).
- Other priorities replace Him as number one.

1.3 Increasing Our Love for God

- **The most needed thing is that our love for God will keep increasing.**
- **The most devastating occurrence is when our love for God stops growing and begins to diminish.**

In God's forever expanding Kingdom, it is His will that we intentionally pursue the increase of His love in our lives: *"Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end."*

Our love for God is like a fire that, if intentionally tended, with increased:

- Burden for the lost,
- Obedience to God's will,
- Charity for those in need,
- Effectual prayer,

will burn brighter, affecting people in need of a Savior. But like an unattended fire, its intensity will decrease and begin to grow lukewarm and cold.

We grow in our relationship with God by:

- Listening to Him through His Word.
- Talking to Him in prayer (discussed in Chapter 4.1).
- Partnering with Him in the transactions of His supernatural business (discussed in Section III, Chapter 4.3).

-- From The Biblical Illustrator

The perfecting of our love to God. There are few of us who know much of the depths of the love of God; our love is shallow. Our love to God is like a great mountain. The majority of travelers view it from afar or traverse the valley at its base: a few climb to a halting place on one of its elevated spurs whence they see a portion of its sublimities: here and there an adventurous traveler climbs a minor peak, and views glacier and alp at closer range; fewest of all are those who scale the top most pinnacle and tread the virgin snow.² (C. H. Spurgeon)

The more we know about God, the more we will understand His love and consequently, love Him more. Therefore, we must study:

- His Word
 - His creation
 - History (His loving faithfulness in past generations)

Studying God's Word

God wants His children to give Him gratitude for His mercies and blessings. But He also wants the enthusiastic use of their intellect to know every possible thing **about Him and His ways**. This is loving God with the mind. He implores: **“Study Me! Understand Me! Know Me!”**

Matt. 11:29

*29 Take my yoke upon you, and **learn of me**; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls.*

We should, therefore, be devoted to the study of God's Word, not just reading it. The Bible is a biography (others writing about Him) and an autobiography (God describing Himself). It is a massive reservoir of God's supernatural power, wisdom, guidance and love. It is a love letter to us as privileged sons of God. The more we study Him, the more we will love Him and understand His superlative excellencies:

- His splendor and majesty.
- His great mercy and grace.
- His omnipotence (all powerful).
- His omniscience (infinite wisdom).
- His steadfastness (never changing).
- His faithfulness and trustworthiness.
- His omnipresence (He is everywhere).
- His holiness and incomprehensible goodness.
- His great love for man by becoming a man and redeeming us through His blood on the cross.
- His . . .

Studying His Creation

God uses His creation of the universe as the foremost way to describe His greatness. When we study its splendor (described in Chapter 1) and the beauty of our world, we will be in awe of such a powerful, loving God. We are a mere grain of sand on the shores of time, living in a tiny spec called earth; yet the God of the universe attends to the details of our lives -- what a wonderful, loving God we have.

Isa. 40:26-27

26 Look at the night skies: Who do you think made all this? Who marches this army of stars out each night, counts them off, calls each by name -- so magnificent! so powerful! -- and never overlooks a single one?

27 Why would you ever complain, O Jacob, or, whine, Israel, saying, “God has lost track of me. He doesn’t care what happens to me”? MSG

Ps. 147:3-4

3 He healeth the broken in heart, and bindeth up their wounds.

4 He telleth the number of the stars; he calleth them all by their names.

On one hand, God knows us at the individual level, and conversely He declares His control over the vast universe. He holds the world in His hand, yet He also holds you and me in His hand.

Studying History

Since God never changes, we can study how He worked in the past and understand how He will work today and tomorrow.

Heb. 13:8

8 Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today, and forever. TLB

The Bible is a great history Book that displays the love and devotion of God for His people. But since the last recorded book of the Bible, almost 2,000 years ago, the history of faithfulness to His people has continued. The restoration of Israel to their homeland, after being persecuted and scattered for almost 2,000 years, is a monument to the faithfulness and love of God.

God’s hand on the church through the Dark Ages, bringing about its restoration, assures us that His highest priority is His church. The hand of God working in our lives is a testimony to His love.

- **Acknowledging the loving hand of God in our personal past should give us cause to love Him more in the future.**

The Love of God is Our Spiritual Compass

Since ancient times, the needle of the compass has always pointed north, being drawn by the earth's magnetic field. In the darkest night, in the deepest jungle, when it is impossible for someone to see their way, the compass needle gives direction -- pointing toward the North Pole.

The home base for our direction in the Spirit is love for God and our neighbor. The spiritual compass is not directed by the force of a magnetic field, but by the greatest force in the universe -- the love of God.

Anytime we have lost our direction and start loving God and our fellow man, we are moving in the right direction. Our spiritual compass does not point to the North Pole or the North Star but to the Bright and Morning Star -- Jesus Christ. *"In Him there is no variableness neither shadow of turning."* He has not changed since the beginning of time and He never will.

- **Only the love of God will bring us peace and joy, leading us safely through this world and home to heaven.**

The common theme woven throughout every book in the Bible is love. This word alone describes the entire Bible:

- Loving God supremely.
- Loving our neighbor as ourselves.
- Loving our brother more than ourselves (*Phil. 2:3*).

-- From The Biblical Illustrator

Every Christian grace is some form of love:

- Faith is love -- leaning.
- Courage is love -- daring.
- Hope is love -- expecting.
- Sacrifice is love -- giving.
- Patience is love -- waiting.
- Burden is love -- interceding.

FUNDAMENTALS FOR GROWTH IN OUR PARTNERSHIP WITH GOD

- Repentance is love -- grieving.
- Obedience is love -- submitting.
- Compassion is love -- ministering.

And so on through all the list of Christian virtues. And thus, we see how it is that a man has just as much religion as he has love and no more.² (C. Clemance, D.D.)

2. Growing in Obedience

God displayed His demand for obedience from His people when with His own finger He etched the first written commandments in tablets of stone.

- **Chiseled in the stone of eternity, these commandments were never to be altered or changed.**

Ex. 31:18

18 And he gave unto Moses, when he had made an end of communing with him upon Mount Sinai, two tables of testimony, tables of stone, written with the finger of God.

Ex. 32:16

*16 And the tables were the work of God, and the writing was the writing of God, **graven upon the tables.***

Ex. 34:1

*1 And the Lord said unto Moses, Hew thee two tables of stone like unto the first: and **I will write upon these tables the words that were in the first tables,** which thou brakest.*

Deut. 4:13-14

*13 And he declared unto you his covenant, which he commanded you to perform, even **ten commandments; and he wrote them upon two tables of stone.***

*14 And the Lord **commanded me at that time to teach you** statutes and judgments, that ye might do them in the land whither ye go over to possess it.*

There is a theme throughout the Word of God that signifies God's blessings for obedience and His displeasure for disobedience.

- **Life or death, prosperity or destruction depends on obedience.**

Deut. 30:15, 16, 19

15 See, I set before you today life and prosperity, death and destruction.

16 For I command you today to love the LORD your God, to walk in his ways, and to keep his commands, decrees and laws; then you will live and increase, and the LORD your God will bless you in the land you are entering to possess.

*19 This day I call heaven and earth as witnesses against you that I have set before you life and death, blessings and curses. **Now choose life**, so that you and your children may live. NIV*

The theme of Deuteronomy is **obedience to God**, repeated over 100 times in various ways: keep His law, His commandments, His statutes, His judgments. Obedience brings the blessings of God and disobedience brings the curses of God.

God Blesses Obedience

Deut. 28:1-3

*1 And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt **hearken diligently unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe and to do all his commandments** which I command thee this day, that the Lord thy God will set thee on high above all nations of the earth:*

*2 And **all these blessings shall come on thee**, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God.*

3 Blessed shalt thou be in the city, and blessed shalt thou be in the field . . .

Eleven verses (v. 3-13) follow, with **30 blessings** promised to those who are obedient.

God Curses Disobedience

Deut. 28:15-16

*15 But it shall come to pass, if thou wilt not hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command thee this day; **that all these curses shall come upon thee, and overtake thee:***

16 Cursed shalt thou be in the city, and cursed shalt thou be in the field . . .

The next fifty-three verses (v. 15-68) pronounce 117 curses on those who are disobedient.

Obedience is Better Than Sacrifice

Obedience is the foundation of sacrifice; sacrifice without obedience is idolatry. The heathen do that, sometimes mutilating their own bodies or sacrificing their children to their gods.

When King Saul sinned in not obeying God to destroy all the enemy and their possessions, Samuel declared a timeless truth -- ***to obey is better than sacrifice.***

1 Sam. 15:22-23

*22 And Samuel said, hath the Lord as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the Lord? **Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams.***

23 For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry. Because thou hast rejected the word of the Lord, he hath also rejected thee from being king.

-- From Matthew Henry's Commentary

That nothing is so provoking to God as disobedience, setting up our wills in competition with his. This is called rebellion and stubbornness, and is said to be as bad as witchcraft and

idolatry, v. 23. It is as bad to set up other gods as to live in disobedience to the true God.¹

Our love for God is the basis for obedience. In fact, love is the foundational theme of the entire Bible -- “. . . *if you love me, you will keep my commandments.*” Love brings us to obedience, and obedience results in sacrifice. Sacrifice brings new levels of anointing -- divine ability to do God’s work on earth.

The Laws of the Lord Are Right and Are Not Grievous

The Old Testament prophet, Hosea declared, “*The ways of the Lord are right, and the just shall walk in them.*”

-- From Jamieson, Fausset, and Brown Commentary

The ways of the Lord are right, not because we see the reason of them all, but simply because they are the Lord’s ways. The end of moral science, says Aristotle, is not knowledge, but practice. Let us “walk in them,” so shall we find them altogether right, pleasant, and intelligible. Justified by the righteousness of Christ, which those wondrous ways of the Lord have thrown open to us, we shall be “just,” and shall also justify the ways of our loving God.²

To the people of the world, the commandments of God are difficult and burdensome. But to every true Christian, the commandments of God are desirable and delightful, as described by King David.

Ps. 19:8-11

8 The statutes of the Lord are right, rejoicing the heart: the commandment of the Lord is pure, enlightening the eyes.

9 The fear of the Lord is clean, enduring for ever: the judgments of the Lord are true and righteous altogether.

10 More to be desired are they than gold, yea, than much fine gold: sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb.

11 Moreover by them is thy servant warned: and in keeping of them there is great reward.

Ps. 119:165

165 Great peace have they which love thy law: and nothing shall offend them.

A slave obeys his master because he doesn't want to be punished. An employee commits to his employer because he needs a paycheck to feed and clothe his family. But as Christians we should obey our heavenly Father because of our desire to please Him and enjoy His favor.

Two Parts to Obedience

Obedience and commitment have both **positive** and **negative** roles. We must pursue both:

- Submit to God. "Submit" is a military term that means to be "subordinated" or "to render obedience".
- Resist the devil. "Resist" means take a stand against. Take a stand against him and he will flee.

There are two parts to obedience. The first is resisting sin and satan -- saying "no" to satan. The second is responding "yes" to God's will. Refer to the table on the following page.

Two Parts to Obedience

	Positive -- Saying “Yes” to God and His Will	Negative -- Saying “No” to Sin and Satan
James 4:7	Submit yourselves to God	Resist the devil
Col. 3:2	Set your affections on things above	Not on things of the earth
Matt. 6:24	No man can serve two masters: - Love God or - Hate God	- Hate the world - Love the world
James 4:4	Friend of God	Enemy of the world
Titus 2:12	Live soberly, righteously and godly	Denying ungodliness and worldly lust
Rom. 13:14	Put on the Lord Jesus Christ	Make no provision for the flesh and its lust
Luke 14:11	Humility -- God’s way (shall be exalted)	Pride -- satan’s way (shall be abased)

2.1 Saying “No” to Sin and Satan

The Word of God gives us two choices -- either love the world or love the Father (1 John 2:15). We cannot simultaneously pursue two contradictory directions. *“No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other” (John 16:13).* We choose either God and His values or the world. If Jesus Christ is truly the Lord of our life, then His values will determine our actions.

The human desire to be accepted and live in a comfort zone, satisfying the carnal man, will find this message uncomfortable. The true Christian will always live in tension with the world, rejecting most products of human culture. The countercultural

lifestyle of the Christian invites rejection because our God-given spiritual values will always conflict with worldly values.

The strife between the spiritual man and the carnal man will always exist. Those who pursue a mixture of the things of God and the world will become lukewarm and backslide. The most dangerous sin, the sin that God hates the most, is lukewarmness. *“I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth” (Rev. 3:15-16).*

The Sins of the Flesh and Spirit

In Galatians, Apostle Paul reemphasizes the Ten Commandments as prohibiting the works of the flesh in his writings:

Gal. 5:1, 16, 17, 19-21

*I Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and **be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.***

16 This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.

*17 **For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other:***

19 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these;

Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness,

20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,

21 Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

Sins of the flesh should be easier for the Christian to overcome. The greater challenge will be sins such as: self-righteousness, selfishness, spiritual pride, bad attitudes, bitterness, offense, murmuring, being critical and judgmental and anything that is opposite to the fruit of the Spirit: love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness and temperance.

Since satan works from the outside (the flesh vs. the soul and spirit), he attacks the five senses first -- particularly **the sense of sight**. Incredible advancements in technology have created methods for satan, through Hollywood and other evil sources, to present **ungodly images** of sin via the internet, television, video, personal computer and other means. Satan is subtly hiding his messages of evil in a larger presentation of seemingly harmless entertainment. Apostle Paul warns that a little sin will corrupt the whole: *“Don’t you realize that this sin is like a little yeast that spreads through the whole batch of dough?” (1 Cor. 5:6) NLT*

In a recent radio talk show, regarding the huge problem in America with promiscuity of middle school children and the result of babies born out of wedlock, the host made a shocking statement:

“We are living in a society that is being inundated with images from television, video, internet, and other media, of sex, violence and evil created by Hollywood. **These images and messages are being authored by satan himself and are coming straight from hell!**”

Considering that this announcer is liberal, by most Christian standards, how much more should the voice of righteousness be heralded from us as Christians?

- **Psychologists, educators and other doctors have been warning about damaging consequences of mainstream television for many years before cable TV, DVD’s and the internet were available.**
- **Where is the voice of righteousness declaring, as defined in the Ten Commandments, that watching sin and the works of the flesh are detrimental to both the natural man and the spiritual man?**

Apostle Paul established guidelines to filter what we **think**, which is also applicable to what we **hear and see**. *“Think on these things”* can be changed to **“listen to these things”** or **“look on**

these things”, because what we hear and see directly affects our thoughts (*Phil. 4:8-9*).

Listening to or watching images that violate this eight-fold filter: “is it **true**?”, “is it **honest**?”, “is it **just**?”, “is it **pure**?”, “is it **lovely**?”, “is it a **good report**?”, “is there any **virtue**?”, “is there any **praise**?” -- is carnal and will adversely influence the spiritual man.

The question: “**Is intentional viewing of sin a sin?**” is addressed in the book of Romans.

Rom. 1:29-32

29 Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers,

30 Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents,

31 Without understanding, covenant breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful:

*32 Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but **have pleasure in them that do them.***

-- From Jamieson, Fausset, and Brown Commentary

But have pleasure in (or ‘consent to’) them that do them [suneudokousin]. The word conveys the idea of positive satisfaction in a person or thing.²

- **Viewing images or text or listening to voices that portray or glamorize sin as a part of our entertainment (enjoyment) is an ungodly action that feeds the flesh and weakens the spiritual man. And if this is continued over a period of time it will dull the voice of the conscience and the voice of the Spirit and lead to spiritual decline.**

- **It is very dangerous for the spiritual man to become carnal, because the carnal mind can justify anything that the conscience of man or the Spirit of God condemns.**

A Sobering Warning Message from Jesus -- Don't Look Back

The most dangerous part of our journey to heaven is just before the reward of the righteous and the destruction of the wicked. Jesus warned His disciples, regarding the endtime generation and the rapture of the church: ***“Remember Lot’s wife”*** (Luke 17:24-32).

The cities of Sodom and Gomorrah had a destiny with judgment because of their terrible sins. Because of Abraham’s intercessory prayers, God sent two angels to provide Lot’s family a miraculous escape. The angels literally dragged Lot, his wife and two daughters out of the city. Then the angels gave them the following warning from God:

- Escape for thy life.
- **Don’t look back.**
- Hasten and escape to the mountain or be consumed.

Lot’s wife was safely out of danger, but her heart remained in Sodom. She lingered behind and then **looked back** in disobedience to the angel’s warning; God’s judgment immediately turned her into a pillar of salt. She became a statue, a monument, to remind us of God’s great displeasure for those who **look back** after having been provided a way of escape.

She was not destroyed with the wicked in Sodom, but by the individual judgment of God who will not tolerate disobedience. She did not go back; she did not take one step backward. But that mere backward glance revealed what was still in her heart.

We are the endtime generation that Jesus referred to in His message of warning to His disciples. That same message should be a solemn warning to us today.

- **After having been miraculously delivered from a world of sin and being given a wonderful plan to escape the “*wrath to come*” -- don’t look back! We must ask God to purge our heart of anything that would displease Him and cause us to look back!**
- **Jesus emphasized this message in His teachings -- “*Don’t look back*”.**

Luke 9:62

*62 And Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plough, and **looking back**, is fit for the kingdom of God.*

62 But Jesus told him, Anyone who lets himself be distracted from the work I plan for him is not fit for the Kingdom of God. TLB

Living in obedience as a born-again believer is more than rejecting worldliness and laying aside the sins of the flesh. God is searching the church today, desiring to find pure lives through which He can perform His supernatural work -- “*For the eyes of the Lord run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to **shew himself strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward him.***”

1 Peter 1:15-16

*15 As **obedient children**, let yourselves be pulled into a way of life shaped by God’s life, a life energetic and blazing with **holiness**.*

*16 God said, “**I am holy; you be holy.**” MSG*

2 Cor. 7:1

*1 With promises like this to pull us on, dear friends, let’s make a Clean break with everything that defiles or distracts us, both within and without. Let’s make our entire lives **fit and holy temples** for the worship of God. MSG*

- **Remember Lot’s wife. Don’t look back!**

2.2 Saying “Yes” to God and His Will

Everything in creation, except man, obeys the will of God. King David declares, “*Fire and hail, snow, and vapor, stormy wind fulfill His Word.*” In the book of Jonah, the winds, waves, and even the fish obeyed God’s will, but the prophet was unwilling to pursue God’s specific, revealed will. The plant that grew up and shaded the prophet from the sun, and the little worm that destroyed it, did what God commanded. Yet the prophet stubbornly followed his own will.

Beyond obeying the plan of salvation are additional steps required to take us into the will of God. Total obedience to God’s will is primary. Either we will remain at the door of salvation or we are going to press forward into His Kingdom and will.

Arthur W. Pink said, “Few indeed realize that Christ is honored only as we live wholly unto Him, and that, by walking in subjection to His revealed will. Satan is deceiving many today by leading them to suppose that they are trusting in ‘the finished work’ of Christ while doing their own will.”

How can we be certain what God’s will is for our lives? If we are walking closely with the Lord and truly seeking His will, God will place His desires in our heart. The key is wanting God’s will -- not our own.

- **Are we willing to do God’s will or do we want to find out and then decide?**

Knowing God's Will

Of all the myriad of decisions we face every day, fortunately, most superficial and of little consequence. "What shall I wear?" "What will I eat for dinner?"

Other decisions have eternal consequences. In making them, we have two God-given instructors to follow -- Spirit and truth:

- The Spirit of God -- "*Led by the Spirit*" (Rom. 8:14).
- The written Word of God -- "*Thy word is a lamp to my feet and a light to my path*" (Ps. 119:105).

We must seek God for guidance in every critical decision -- "*that we may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.*" He sees from a perspective that includes every factor in our every decision. Unlike us, He knows the future and the **eternal impact**.

-- From "How to Know the Will of God"

Every decision should be tested by four criteria before choosing the path that we will pursue:

1. Is it scriptural? This means studying what the whole Bible teaches -- search the Scriptures: "*Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.*" Evaluate your choices against the infallible Word of God.

2. Is it right? Every expression of God's will conform to God's universal principles of morality and decency. If a choice would result in the depreciation of human worth or the integrity of the family or related traditional Christian values, it must be discarded.

3. Is it providential? This test requires every impression to be considered in the light of providential circumstances, such as: are the necessary doors opening or closing? Do circumstances permit the implementation of what you feel

to be God's will? Is God speaking to you through these events?

4. Is it reasonable? The final criterion against which the will of God is measured relates to the appropriateness of the act. Is it consistent with the character of God to require it? Will this act contribute to the Kingdom?

The following steps reflect Apostle Paul's decision-making process in pursuing the will of God for his ministry (Romans 1:8-13; 15:20-29):

- a. Purposes:** Paul adopted spiritual goals that were based on divine revelation.
- b. Priorities:** He arranged his goals into wise priorities determining what should be done first, second, third, etc.
- c. Plans:** Next, he devised plans that gave him a strategy for accomplishing his objectives.
- d. Prayer:** Through prayer, he submitted himself and his plans to the sovereign will of God. (No doubt, he also prayed for wisdom in the formulation of his plans, though not mentioned in this context.)
- e. Perseverance:** When providentially hindered from accomplishing his plans, he assumed that the delay was God's sovereign will. This conviction freed him from discouragement. Since his plans were sound, the only thing he adjusted was the timetable.
- f. Presentation:** Paul explained his decisions on the basis of God's moral will and his own personal application of wisdom.³

- **The will of God is revelatory, changing as we continue in our Christian walk. He will reveal His will for our next assignment as we continue faithfully in our current one.**
- **The calling of God and the will of God will always lead us beyond where we are in our spiritual experience. God loves us too much to leave us unchanged.**
- **If we are ready to progress, God is calling to move us further into the business of His Kingdom and the next step of His will for our lives.**

If we are led by the Spirit, it will lead us into new supernatural experiences. *“For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God” (Rom. 8:14).*

The Spirit will lead us as sons of God into:

- A life of sacrifice and service.
- Godly actions and conversation.
- Faithfulness to the house of God.
- A deeper relationship with the Father.
- A spiritual walk, away from the carnal.
- A daily devotion of prayer and the Word.
- The battlefield to defeat the works of the devil.
- Into the supernatural, enabling us to fulfill all of God’s will.
- The harvest field, seeking the lost, ministering to their needs.

Refer to the following page for a summary of four distinctive ways that God guides us into His will.

Four Distinctive Ways That God Guides³

	Moral Guidance	Wisdom Guidance	Sovereign Guidance	Special Guidance
Sphere:	In moral conduct	In non-moral decisions	In all things	In unique cases
Nature:	God directly guides believers	God immediately guides believers	God secretly guides believers	God supernaturally guides believers
Means:	By revealed commands and principles	By acquired wisdom	By sovereign control over all events	By divine voice, angel, dream or miracle
Governing Principle:	According to His moral will (Bible)	According to spiritual expediency	According to His sovereign will	According to special revelation

God’s Will for Every Born-again Believer

God’s general will for every believer is obvious because God’s purpose remains constant. His specific will must be revealed to us as we seek Him, since it changes as we move from level to level in His Kingdom.

The general will of our heavenly Father is for every believer to participate in His business. His specific will includes His **unique calling** to a specific area of His business. In every case, it will involve directly touching people in need of deliverance, healing and salvation. His two-fold will applies to us operating as a son of man with our abilities and as a son of God with His abilities.

It is advantageous to have good talent in the church to enhance our praise and worship. But these supporting ministries are not a prerequisite for the restoration of the Apostolic church. There is no evidence that this was a significant part of the original church in the book of Acts.

But to have the revival and evangelism, displayed in the first century church, we must have the supernatural operation of the Spirit with signs, wonders and miracles. This will happen as Spirit-filled believers obediently embrace God's will.

Zech. 4:6

6 Not by might, nor by power, but by my Spirit, says the Lord Almighty - you will succeed because of my Spirit. TLB

Dan. 11:32

32 The people that do know their God shall be strong, and do exploits.

John 14:12

12 He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do.

- **There is a trend in the church culture of the twenty-first century, to substitute natural talent, and even entertainment when the Apostolic ministry with supernatural power is missing, or begins to diminish in the church. Apostle Paul warns this would be one of the signs of the last days in which we are now living.**

2 Tim. 3:5

5 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

5 For [although] they hold a form of piety (true religion), they deny and reject and are strangers to the power of it [their conduct belies the genuineness of their profession] . . . AMP

5 They will hold to the outward form of religion, but reject its real power. . . GNT

- **May we always embrace the miraculous work of the Spirit and hunger for the operation of the supernatural in our lives and our churches -- allowing Him to, “*Do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us*” (Eph. 3:30).**

2.3 Humility the Foundation of Obedience

The dictionary defines humility as “modesty, lacking pretence, not believing that you are superior to others, having a lowly opinion of oneself, meekness.”

-- **From www.unification.net**

Humility is an essential attitude for success in the spiritual life. Any self-conceit, whether nurtured by superior intelligence, wealth, a high position, or the praise of others, is an obstacle on the path. Genuine humility requires a constant willingness to deny oneself, to be critical of oneself, and to be obedient to Heaven’s guidance.⁴

True worship is humbling ourselves to the lowest state and exalting God to the highest state. The difference between the estimate of our worth and God’s worth is the measure of our true worship.

Humility Quotes

It was pride that changed angels into devils; it is humility that makes men as angels. (Saint Augustine)

Humility is to make a right estimate of one's self. (Charles Spurgeon)

Humility is the gateway into the grace and the favor of God. (Harold Warner)

Power is dangerous unless one has humility. (Richard J. Daley)

Pride makes us artificial and humility makes us real. (Thomas Merton)

Finally, when the soul gives itself to the will of God and conquers pride, then the mind contains nothing but God, and the soul stands before Him with humility, having a pure mind and heart. (A.N. Serfes)

Do you wish to rise? Begin by descending. You plan a tower that will pierce the clouds? Lay first the foundation of humility. (Saint Augustine)

Humility is the foundation of all the other virtues hence, in the soul in which this virtue does not exist, there cannot be any other virtue except in mere appearance. (Saint Augustine)

Humility is the gateway into the grace and the favor of God. (Harold Warner)

There is greatness in the fear of God, contentment in faith of God, and honour in humility. (Abu Bakr)

Humility, that low, sweet root, from which all heavenly virtues shoot. (Thomas Moore)

If we learn not humility, we learn nothing. (John Jewel)

I believe the first test of a truly great man is in his humility. (John Ruskin)

We come nearest to the great when we are great in humility.
(Rabindranath Tagore)

Humility is the solid foundation of all virtues. (Kong Fu Zi)

Humility is not thinking less of yourself, it's thinking of yourself less. (Rick Warren)

Humility in the Old Testament

Moses, Job, King David, King Solomon, Isaiah and Micah stressed God's demand for His people to live in humility.

Deut. 8:2	God led thee forty years in the wilderness to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know whether thou wouldest keep his commandments.
2 Chr. 7:14	If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves and pray, then will I hear from heaven and heal their land.
2 Chr. 34:27	Because thou didst humble thyself . . . I have heard thee.
Job 22:29	He shall save the humble person.
Ps. 9:12	He forgetteth not the cry of the humble .
Ps. 10:17	Lord, thou hast heard the desire of the humble .
Prov. 29:23	A man's pride shall bring him low: but honour shall uphold the humble in spirit.
Isa. 57:15	For thus saith the high and lofty One . . . I dwell in the high and holy place with him that is of a contrite and humble spirit.
Micah 6:8	What doth the LORD require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?

Humility in the New Testament

The New Testament writers make it clear that humility is the only way to become great in God's eyes. Downward mobility is not just the best of many paths a Christian can take to gain God's favor -- it is the only one.

***** Apostle Peter stressed the need for humility *****

1 Peter 5:5-6

*5 All of you be subject one to another, and be **clothed with humility**: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth **grace to the humble**.*

*6 **Humble** yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time:*

***** Apostle James declares that going down, in God's *** economy, always leads up**

James 4:10

*10 **Humble** yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.*

***** Apostle Paul describes Christ's example of humility *****

Phil. 2:3, 5, 7, 8

*3 Don't be selfish; don't live to make a good impression on others. Be **humble**, thinking of others as better than yourself.*

5 You must have the same attitude that Christ Jesus had. TLB

7 But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men:

*8 And being found in fashion as a man, he **humbled** himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.*

The highest came to serve the lowest. The Creator and sustainer of all things came in humility and poured Himself out as a sacrifice. The One who possessed everything became nothing, exemplifying for us pure humility and love.

***** Jesus' teachings of humility *****

Matt. 18:4

*4 Whosoever therefore shall **humble** himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.*

Mark 9:35

*35 He called the twelve disciples to him, and said, "Whoever wants to be first **must take last place and be the servant of everyone else.**" NLT*

Luke 14:11, Luke 18:14

*11 For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that **humbleth** himself shall be exalted.*

Jesus Our Example of Humility

God coming to the earth in human form exemplified humility in its purest form. He descended from the highest of heaven's glory to the lowest of earth's estate:

- Born in extreme, unfavorable conditions in a stable.
- Lived in poverty and worked obscurely as a lowly carpenter.
- The Creator and owner of all things, He had no home.
- The King of Kings, He became a servant to all.
- The source of all truth, He was falsely accused and judged guilty of blasphemy.
- The giver of all life, He chose the most inhumane way to die.

The purpose for Christ's downward humility was to model for us how to duplicate His supernatural ministry. This display of God's love tabernacled in flesh shook the empire of His day and is still working through believers who will follow the path of self-abasement.

Humility and Pride

From the world's perspective, the upward path of self-promotion is the preferred direction to go. Just as a compass needle points north, the human needs needle points upward. In every human lies ego driven by pride craving recognition, power and greatness.

- **Pride, the loss of humility, is the root of every sin. This evil from hell is deeply rooted in the heart of humanity.**

Without radical surgery to remove such pride and replace it with humility, it will:

- Cause us to be critical and judgmental.
- Drain the joy of fulfillment from our lives.
- Prevent spiritual growth.
- Cost us our souls for eternity.

Humility is the greatest virtue central to everything good. Humility means putting God and others ahead of our own selfish interests. It is the place of entire dependence on God.

- **Humility is the only soil where the fruit of the Spirit will grow and the supernatural gifts of the Spirit will work.**

Pure humility will not automatically come, but will be obtained through desire, prayer and practice. We must strive to live in humility and avoid pride, since pride is a destroyer. To the carnal man, humility is a seemingly brutal downward path to self-demotion. But the spiritual man understands that it leads to fulfillment and joy. Paradoxically: "Greatness is not a measure of self-will, but rather self-abandonment -- the more you lose, the more you gain."

-- From Spirit of Prayer, Part II

There is nothing so natural to man, nothing so insidious and hidden from our sight, nothing so difficult and dangerous, as pride. Let us feel that nothing but a very determined and

persevering waiting on God will discover how lacking we are in the grace of humility, and how impotent to obtain what we seek. Let us study the character of Christ until our souls are filled with the love and admiration of His lowliness.

The truth is this: Pride must die in you, or nothing of heaven can live in you. Pride brings death, and humility brings life; the one is all evil, the other is all good. So much as you have of pride within you, you have of the fallen angels alive in you; so much as you have of true humility, so much you have of the Lamb of God within you.⁵

Humility and the Supernatural

Jesus exemplified how we should react when God's supernatural acts are performed through us:

- **He healed the deaf man:** *“And he charged them that they should **tell no man**” (Mark 7:36).*
- **He healed the leprous man:** *“Then Jesus sent him on his way with a stern warning: **Don’t tell anyone** about this” (Mark 1:42-43).*
- **He resurrected the dead girl:** *“He [Jesus] gave them strict orders **not to tell anyone**” (Mark 5:42-43).*
- **He healed the blind man:** *“And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, **nor tell it** to any in the town” (Mark 8:25-26).*

Without humility, man will always aspire to the recognition that belongs to God as He works through humanity to perform His supernatural, miraculous acts of signs, wonders and miracles.

Growing in Obedience

- **Humility is demanded by God as a foundational requirement for man to be used in the realm of the supernatural.**
- **Without pure humility, the restoration of Apostolic ministry and the operation of the supernatural will never be realized.**

The burden of the Lord means bringing to pass His promises and prophecies. If this is not happening, He is waiting on us to meet the requirements for the promise, birthing it through intercessory prayer.

3. *Growing in Burden*

Prayer is the key to our relationship with God and our power as a New Testament Christian, but burdens are the primary force that drives us to our knees in earnest, fervent prayer:

- Our burdens.
- Burden for others.
- Burden of the Lord.

One of the fundamental requirements for miracles is that our actions of prayer and care for those in need be driven by a burden. Refer to Chart G-6, “Burden + Prayer + Care = Miracles”, in Appendix 1.

3.1 Our Burdens

Burdens and problems are tools that God often uses to change us and strengthen our faith and trust in Him. At other times, burdens are sent to correct, humble, and send us to our knees in prayer.

Ps. 25:17-18

17 The troubles of my heart are enlarged: O bring thou me out of my distresses.

18 Look upon mine affliction and my pain; and forgive all my sins.

Ps. 119:67, 135, 136, 153

67 Before I was afflicted I went astray: but now have I kept thy

word.

135 Make thy face to shine upon thy servant; and teach me thy statutes.

136 Rivers of waters run down mine eyes, because they keep not thy law.

153 Consider mine affliction, and deliver me: for I do not forget thy law.

Isa. 43:1-2

1 But now thus saith the Lord that created thee, . . . Fear not: for I have redeemed thee, I have called thee by thy name; thou art mine.

2 When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee.

Prayer and burdens are partners with trial. Trouble or trial often drives us to a deeper prayer life. Troubles make us recognize our frailty and our need of God. When going through trials, prayer either delivers us or provides strength to endure.

Trouble is common to man. Job said, “*Man that is born of a woman is of few days, and full of trouble.*” Apostle Paul stated, “*It is through many hardships and tribulations that we would enter the Kingdom of God.*” Apostle Peter exclaimed, “*Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you: But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ’s sufferings.*”

Without exception to age or station in life; there are unlimited varieties of problems, troubles or trials. No two people have the same trouble under the same circumstances. God does not deal with any two of His children exactly the same, just as we parents do not approach our children exactly the same.

Trouble is under control of our heavenly Father and it is a

common way for God to fulfill His purposes in perfecting His saints. Trial is testing which proves, and makes us stronger. It makes us better when we submit to God's purpose.

In the beginning the angels were created beings, never experiencing trial, and one-third of them sinned and fell from heaven. Now God's plan includes trial and testing for every child of God before they inherit the glories of heaven.

Rev. 7:13-14

13 What are these which are arrayed in white robes?

*14 And I said unto him, sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, these are they which came out of **great tribulation**, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.*

God sometimes lets trials come into our lives because we have placed our trust in other things -- careers, possessions, success in life, etc. God gets our attention as problems come for which we have no answer. When this happens, we feel a more pressing need to pray. During these times, we can find shelter in the Rock of Ages -- a place of prayer to strengthen and sustain us until the storm is over.

More is to be learned in the turbulence than in peaceful time. King David said, "*In the valley he restoreth my soul.*" We can thank God for trials that have brought correction, drawn us closer to Him and made us more sensitive to His Spirit.

No great victory is possible without a great battle or miracle without a problem. It is not God's will for us to just survive, that would mean defeat; but God's higher purpose for our trials is to develop us. It is a beautiful study of God's purpose for trials. When God wants to educate us, He does not enroll us in the school of graces, but in the school of testing.

Joseph endured the pit and the dungeon before being promoted to the throne of the most powerful nation in the world. When the sun rose one morning, he was a prisoner in a foreign land with no hope

of escape; accused of a crime punishable by death. But before the sun set, he was wearing the Egyptian king's royal robe, second in command to the ruler of the world's most powerful nation.

Moses tended sheep in the desert for 40 years before God called him to lead Israel from Egyptian bondage. One day he was a poor, lowly shepherd and the next day he commanded a nation of two million people.

Paul wrote some of the New Testament from a prison cell. Yet he exhorted, "*Rejoice in the Lord always.*"

Job stated, "*But he knoweth the way that I take: when he hath tried me, I shall come forth as gold.*" God, I don't know where You are, but You know my path. You know where I am and when I am tested, I shall emerge as pure gold.

The three Hebrew children endured the fire before they were exalted in Babylon. During the process, their God was exalted by an entire nation.

Great leaders emerge when crises occurs. In the lives of **achievers**, we read terrible circumstances which forced them above the commonplace. Not only did they find the answer, but discovered a tremendous power within themselves. As Christians, we discover God's tremendous power as we submit to suffering.

In the athletic, business, and spiritual worlds, it is impossible to succeed without suffering. When Glen Cunningham was eight years old, his doctor told him he would never walk again after suffering severe leg burns from a gasoline explosion. Through grueling rehabilitation, he became one of the premiere milers, starring in the 1932 Olympics.

If you are successful and have not suffered, probably someone preceding you has suffered. If you are suffering without success, perhaps someone after you may succeed. But there is not success and significant improvement without self-denial and trial -- we call

it burdens. God works through our burdens to **empty** us of **ourselves** and **fill** us with **more of Him**. For this to happen, we must **embrace the cross**, allowing it to fulfill His intended purpose of changing our lives.

It is a great comfort to know our heavenly Father has invited us to place our cares on Him for Him to carry. In the most difficult of times, when we have no strength, He will carry us.

Ps. 55:22

22 Cast your burden on the Lord [releasing the weight of it] and He will sustain you; He will never allow the [consistently] righteous to be moved (made to slip, fall, or fail). AMP

1 Peter 5:7

7 Casting the whole of your care [all your anxieties, all your worries, all your concerns, once and for all] on Him, for He cares for you affectionately and cares about you watchfully. AMP

Our heavenly Father desires for us to get beyond our own burdens and focus on the **burdens of others**. As we start praying and ministering to the burdens of others, God will work on the resolution to our problems.

3.2 Burden for Others

To please our heavenly Father, we must follow His selfless example of caring for others and bearing their burdens.

Gal. 6:2

2 Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ.

1 John 3:17-18

17 But whoso hath this world's good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?

*18 My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but **in deed** and in truth.*

When we have the true love and compassion of Christ, we will:

- Have a burden for our fellow man in need.
- Pray for someone else's burden.
- Minister to someone else's need as if it were our own.

The Church as a Flock of Sheep

The Bible compares the church to a flock of sheep. Our over shepherd (our pastor) will answer to God for those under his care. We must honor those whom He has placed over us for they watch for our souls and will be held accountable. Therefore, we should pray for and thank God for our leaders.

Acts 20:28

*28 And now beware! Be sure that you feed and **shepherd God's flock** -- his church, purchased with his blood -- for the Holy Spirit is holding you responsible as overseers. TLB*

Jesus Christ refers to Himself as the good Shepherd who died for us; purchasing our pardon and salvation with His own blood.

John 10:11, 14

11 I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.

14 I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.

We often overlook the importance of the relationship of the sheep in the flock. We are responsible to bear each other's burdens in the family of God and others not yet in the church. We must minister to one another because we need each other and should love each other more. This in-reach ministry attends to hurting people in our own church.

Two kinds of people comprise the church, those crying on the Inside and others in victory. The victorious should minister to

those hurting. The cycles of life deal all of us similar hurts. Everyone, at some time, will need someone's compassion and care.

We need to find those crying beneath our steeple, inside the church and minister to them. The pastor cannot accomplish this alone -- everyone must be involved.

A sobering thought, indeed, is to know without our participation some people will never be touched. **When the in-reach of the church is effective, the outreach of the church will be more effective.** We must become a family of New Testament Christians who pray for each other and carry each other's burdens.

Halfway in one of the Special Olympics races, one boy fell down and cried out. Those ahead, turned around and picked him up. Their arms locked around each other, they all made it across the finish line together. It did not matter who finished first; what was important was that they all finished the race.

As Christians; when someone falls or is wounded, we need to restore them. Some say that Christians are the only colony that kills its wounded. This is not intentional; it is just the burdens and busyness of our lives that causes neglect and unconcern. When this happens, we are not functioning as the body of Christ.

We get in our individual car, drive down our individual street, get to our individual church, sit in our individual pew, nod our individual head to our individual sermon, take our individual blessing, get back in our individual car, and return to our individual home.

That is not New Testament Christianity. Christianity is where God's children are called into community just like a family. The early church went from house to house and had all things in common. They were the family of God; bearing one another's burdens. Apostle Paul exhorts in his letter to the Romans: *Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep.*

Some people claim they don't need to attend every church service. But God saved us for **an unselfish calling** to encourage, pray for and minister to the hurting -- "*He hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling.*"

- If our unsaved parent or sibling was going to attend church for the first time, we would inconvenience ourselves in any way to be there.
- If our unsaved friend were going to be at church, we would be there.
- **Someone's parent, sibling, or friend in need will be in every church service and if the pure agape love for God is working in our lives, we will treat them the same as our kin and friend.**

Blessings from God are great; but we receive a much greater one when God flows through us to someone in need. If we get a revelation of this concept, our faithfulness to God's house will be without compromise.

As we minister to the needs of others, our burden will escalate to the next level -- the **burden of the Lord**.

3.3 Burden of the Lord

God gave His Word to describe His great love for man. It is a gigantic love letter recorded over several thousand years by 39 writers. But to reinforce His message, He came to earth and displayed **His burden** as a Son of man walking in human shoes.

The burden of the Lord was prophesied by Old Testament prophets and then exemplified for us in a real life drama as Jesus Christ carried out His earthly ministry.

Isa. 53:3, 4, 11, 12

3 He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief.

4 Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows

*11 He shall see of the **travail of his soul**, and shall be satisfied:
12 . . . He hath **poured out his soul unto death**: and he was
numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of
many, and made **intercession for the transgressors**.*

Mark 14:34

*34 And saith unto them, My soul is **exceeding sorrowful unto death**: tarry ye here, and watch.*

Luke 19:41

*41 And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and **wept over it**.*

John 11:35

35 Jesus wept.

Heb. 5:7

*7 Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up **prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears**.*

- **The Lord carried our burden and now He asks that we carry His burden for His lost world.**

The burden of the Lord concerns what Jesus would be doing if He were still here on the earth. His mission is not complete and it is His burden that we would carry on His mission and ministry in reaching a lost world with a Christ-like burden.

- **Prophecies in the Old Testament were sometimes called “The burden of the Lord”, for God burdened the prophet with His Word and with its execution.**

-- From The Pulpit Commentary

When God gave the prophet a message to declare concerning some place, some person, some nation, it was a burden to the prophet. He felt its solemn weight and responsibility. And he who shall be a rejoicing reaper in the Lord's harvest field is one to whom his sacred toil has been the **burden of the Lord** to him.

This burden is made up of a deep sense of:

- His own insufficiency for the work.
- The urgent need for the work to be done.
- The shortness of time which remains for this work to be done.
- The heavy responsibility resting upon him to be faithful in the work (2 Cor. 5:11).

There may or may not be tears upon his face, but there certainly will be in his heart. Often will he weep there. These are the men who do the Lord's work, and win souls for Him.¹

- **The burden of the Lord has to do with bringing to pass His promises and prophecies. If this is not happening, it is because we must meet the requirements for the promise through intercessory prayer.**

Spiritual gridlock occurs when we are waiting for God to fulfill His promises; and He is waiting on us to birth them through intercessory prayer. The precedent for this concept is seen in Scripture with:

- Elijah praying for God's promise of rain.
- Daniel praying for God's promise to restore Israel to their homeland.

The Burden of the Lord for Rain

Because of Israel's and King Ahab's sin, it had not rained in Israel for 3½ years. When it became God's will (His burden) to send rain, He told the prophet Elijah to inform the king. Although the prophecy was given, there was no sign of rain.

1 Kings 18:42-44

42 . . . And Elijah went up to the top of Carmel; and he cast himself down upon the earth, and put his face between his knees.

43 And said to his servant, Go up now, look toward the sea. And he went up, and looked, and said, There is nothing. And he said, Go

again seven times.

44 And it came to pass at the seventh time, that he said, Behold, there ariseth a little cloud out of the sea, like a man's hand. And he said, Go up, say unto Ahab, Prepare thy chariot, and get thee down, that the rain stop thee not.

It did not rain until Elijah climbed to the mountaintop to pray into fulfillment the **burden of the Lord**. Elijah travailed in prayer as he put his head between his knees (the childbearing position in some cultures). He spent several hours interceding in prayer as his servant checked seven times for a sign of rain.

The Burden of the Lord for the Restoration of Israel

Daniel knew much about prayer. He prayed three times a day, even when his life was threatened for doing so. He is the only person in the Bible where it is recorded that both Gabriel and Michael, the archangels, interceded in bringing answers to his prayers.

Israel had been in Babylonian captivity for many years. One day in Daniel's devotion, he read in Jeremiah that the nation of Israel would be restored to their homeland after 70 years. Daniel realized that this time period had already elapsed.

Dan. 9:2-4

2 In that first year of his reign, I, Daniel, learned from the book of Jeremiah the prophet, that Jerusalem must lie desolate for seventy years.

3 So I earnestly pleaded with the Lord God [to end our captivity and send us back to our own land]. As I prayed, I fasted and wore rough sackcloth, and I sprinkled myself with ashes.

4 And confessed my sins and those of my people. "O Lord," I prayed, "you are a great and awesome God; you always fulfill your promises of mercy to those who love you and keep your laws." TLB

Seventy years had expired and they were still in captivity. There was nothing happening that resembled deliverance from Babylon.

As Daniel began to understand the prophecy of restoration (the burden of the Lord) he sought the Lord through prayer and supplication with fasting in humility of sackcloth and ashes. He repented for Israel's sins and disobedience. As he began to carry the burden of the Lord, it set in motion God's promise to restore Israel to their homeland.

The Burden of the Lord for the Restoration of His Church

Prophecy concerning the restoration of the church illustrates what the church should be like in the endtime. The calendar indicates we are in the final milestone of the 2,000 year Church Age -- the midnight hour preceding the coming of Jesus Christ.

The complete restoration of the Apostolic ministry with signs, wonders and miracles will occur when we carry the burden of the Lord like Elijah and Daniel:

- Elijah prayed his burdened, travailing prayers to end the long drought and for the refreshing rain to restore the parched land.
- Daniel took action, believing it was God's time for restoration and he gave birth to the burden of the Lord through prayer and fasting.

Many times when a prophecy has not been fulfilled, it is because it is not yet God's time. But today; it is harvest time because we are living at the end of time. If we are to experience the restoration of Apostolic ministry, we must become burdened with the burden of the Lord manifested through our sacrifice of prayer, fasting and service.

Who will carry the burden of the Lord? Who will weep over their city like Jesus? Who will pray intercessory, travailing prayers for a great revival that can transcend the book of Acts? The world deserves to see a pure and holy local church fulfilling the burden of the Lord. The first century church's burden transmitted a fire and energy unequalled in almost 20 centuries. Just reading the book

of Acts, we feel the intensity, and zeal of its revival and evangelism.

Now is time for great worldwide revival, including North America. It is happening in some foreign lands where the deceitfulness of riches and prosperity doesn't distract people from putting God first and loving Him completely. The church and their great God are all they have. He is their only hope in time and eternity and we must embrace that same truth.

This will happen in our churches when the **burden of the Lord** drives us to our knees and we pray it into fulfillment. Then we will stop struggling with what and how to pray. The Spirit will be helping us pray -- praying into fruition the will of God.

-- From The Pulpit Commentary

A Christian Church may be formed after the apostolic model, and its constitution may be irreproachably scriptural, but it may fall into spiritual apathy, and care for nothing but its own edification. A single human soul, with an ear sensitive to "the still sad music of humanity," with a heart to feel the weight of "**the burden of the Lord**," with courage to attempt great things for Christ and for men, with the faith that "removes mountains," may be of far more value to the world than such an apathetic and inactive church.¹

The burden of the Lord encompasses His work around the world. We should have a worldwide burden, but we must first carry a burden at the local level, where we can be personally involved and make an immediate difference.

*It is at Mount Calvary, the mountain of sacrifice,
where we are changed into His image as we become
the sacrifice and are crucified with Him, bringing
death to sin and self.*

* * * * *

*The times demand that our service in the Father's
business exceed the intensity of our efforts of
yesteryear.*

4. *Growing in Sacrifice*

As in the anointing of King David, sacrifice will always precede anointing. As sacrifice increases; anointing will increase. The anointing of God's divine ability working in our lives will increase as our sacrifices for God increases.

Sacrifice is defined as:

An act of offering to a deity something precious; especially the killing of a victim on an altar, a destruction or surrender of something for the sake of something else.¹

The act of offering the life of a person or animal, or some object, in propitiation of or homage to a deity. The act of giving up, destroying, permitting injury to, or foregoing something valued for the sake of something having a more pressing claim.²

In the Old Testament, sacrifices were offered as atonement for sins or worship by the Israelites to their God. Their sacrifices were not accepted by God if they were flawed or defective.

Lev. 22:21-22

21 And whosoever offereth a sacrifice of peace-offerings unto the Lord to accomplish his vow, or a free-will offering in beeves or

*sheep, it shall be **perfect to be accepted**; there shall be no blemish therein.*

22 Blind, or broken, or maimed, or having a wen, or scurvy, or scabbed, ye shall not offer these unto the Lord, nor make an offering by fire of them upon the altar unto the Lord.

Mal. 1:8-11, 14

8 “When you give blind animals as sacrifices, isn’t that wrong? And isn’t it wrong to offer animals that are crippled and diseased? Try giving gifts like that to your governor, and see how pleased he is!” says the Lord of Heaven’s Armies.

9 “Go ahead, beg God to be merciful to you! But when you bring that kind of offering, why should he show you any favor at all?” asks the Lord of Heaven’s Armies.

*10 “How I wish one of you would shut the Temple doors so that these worthless sacrifices could not be offered! I am not pleased with you,” says the Lord of Heaven’s Armies, “and **I will not accept your offerings**.*

*11 But my name is honored by people of other nations from morning till night. All around the world they offer sweet incense and pure offerings in honor of my name. For **my name is great among the nations**,” says the Lord of Heaven’s Armies.*

14 “Cursed is the cheat who promises to give a fine ram from his flock but then sacrifices a defective one to the Lord. For I am a great king,” says the Lord of Heaven’s Armies, “and my name is feared among the nations!” NLT

King David understood this concept well when Araunah offered him a threshing floor and oxen for his sacrifice. King David refused, declaring a timeless concept that must be observed in our sacrifices: “No, I will not have it as a gift. I will buy it, for **I don’t want to offer to the Lord my God burnt offerings that have cost me nothing**” (2 Sam. 24:24). TLB

After Christ’s supreme sacrifice on the cross, no longer is there a need for animal sacrifices. Instead, God asks that we present our lives to Him as a living sacrifice.

The Greatest Sacrifice

The greatest sacrifice was when God became man and offered Himself for our sins on **Mount Calvary**. This was typified in the Old Testament when He asked Abraham to offer Isaac, his beloved and only son on **Mount Moriah** as a sacrifice.

The heathen of that day offered their children as sacrifices, giving their best to their gods. The Scripture declares God was testing Abraham; possibly to determine whether Abraham was equally dedicated to Him.

When they reached the mountaintop, Isaac inquired, “*Father, here is the wood and the fire, but **where is the sacrifice?***” An application of truth can be derived in this setting for us today:

- The wood is our message: teaching and preaching (abundantly available).
- The fire is the Spirit of God moving in our lives and churches.
- But where is the sacrifice -- not just worship with our lips, but our actions of **prayer, fasting and service?**

-- From Mount Moriah

There is some archaeological evidence to suppose that the place of the crucifixion of Jesus was at the summit of Mt. Moriah, probably near the present-day Damascus Gate and the Garden Tomb which would of course be a literal fulfillment of Abraham’s offering of Isaac when God said, “On the mount of the Lord it [the final offering for sin] will be provided.”³

Abraham was willing to offer God his most beloved possession. Our awesome God demands and deserves only our very best. The old song, “**I Will Give You All**” patterns how we should determine to live:

**I will give You all, I will give You all,
If all is what You ask of me, I will not withhold.
And if my sacrifice is less, than giving You my very best,
Help me remember Calvary’s cross, and be willing to say yes.⁴**

The Mountain of Glory and the Mountain of Sacrifice

During Jesus' ministry, He took Peter, James and John to a high mountain and was transfigured before them.

Matt. 17:2-4

2 And his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

*4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, **it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.***

In this wonderful scene on the mountaintop were three great witnesses:

- Moses, who represented the Law, is a witness to the resurrection. He had died 1,450 years earlier, and appeared (representing the dead in Christ) recognizable as if he had never died.
- Elijah, who represented the prophets, had never died, was translated to heaven, symbolized the living.
- Lastly, we hear the witness of the Spirit speaking, ***“This is my well beloved Son, hear him.”***

What the three disciples witnessed was not the lowly Shepherd or the suffering Christ, but the King of Kings and Lord of Lords in all of His glory. This was a wonderful, supernatural experience as they viewed this scene along with two witnesses from the Old Testament -- Moses and Elijah. The disciples saw a great light, shining from Jesus, a preview of John the revelator's description of the new Jerusalem where the Lamb is the light: ***“And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof”*** (Rev. 21:23).

When Peter wanted to build three tabernacles and live on the mountaintop, it is not surprising because it would be wonderful to continually live on the mountain of victory and glory. But they were on the wrong mountain for staying long. Nearby was another mountain that would define the rest of their lives -- Mount Calvary.

Although God allows us to enjoy great mountaintop experiences of victory from time to time, that is not where He has chosen for us to live. The mountain He has chosen for us is Calvary, the place of **sacrifice** and death. Apostle Paul addressed the requirement for Christ's followers to live a **sacrificial** life:

Rom. 12:1-2

*1 I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye **present your bodies a living sacrifice**, holy, acceptable unto God, which is **your reasonable service**.*

*2 And **be not conformed to this world**: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may **prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God**.*

- **There were times in the Old Testament when a sacrifice was accepted by God, the fire fell and it was consumed. Today in the New Testament church, we are to become the living sacrifice. To be accepted by God, we must be consumed with the fire of the Holy Ghost and a burning passion for His Kingdom.**

Heb. 13:15-16

*15 Through Him, therefore, let us constantly and at all times offer up to God **a sacrifice of praise, which is the fruit of lips that thankfully acknowledge and confess and glorify His name**. [Lev. 7:12; Isa. 57:19; Hos. 14:2.]*

*16 Do not forget or neglect to **do kindness and good, to be generous and distribute and contribute to the needy**, for such sacrifices are pleasing to God. AMP*

- **It is at Mount Calvary, the mountain of sacrifice, where we are transformed into His image as we become the sacrifice and are crucified with Him, bringing death to sin and self.**

Gal. 2:20

*20 I am **crucified with Christ**: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but **Christ liveth in me**.*

Entire books could be written on the subject of sacrifice and the following is only a brief summary of three significant sacrifices to which we as Christians are called -- prayer, fasting and service. These sacrifices will be effective and accepted by God if motivated by love vs. other forces such as guilt, fear, condemnation, recognition, ritual, routine, etc. Prayer and fasting should not be used to convince God to do something for us, but rather to change us and align us with His purpose and will.

4.1 Sacrifice in Prayer

There are many types of prayer, but for this brief summary we will divide them into two basic categories: **relationship prayer** and **dominion prayer**.

Relationship Prayer

Relationship with God involves sharing a mutual relationship of love, **communication** and trust. Relationship prayer is communion between man and God, and should be a conversation motivated by our love for a loving, personal God. While not all inclusive this includes: **praise** (recognizing and thanking God for what He has done); **worship** (recognizing and giving honor and adoration to God for who He is); **repentance** (asking God to forgive us of sin and self); **request** (asking God to give us mercy and help).

Dominion Prayer

Dominion is God sharing His authority and power with man in a partnership of ministering to people in need. While relationship prayers involve God and us; with dominion prayers, the focus is

most often for others. This type of prayer should be motivated by our love for souls which is in direct relation to our love for God.

Dominion prayer includes:

- Intercessory prayer (standing between God and man).
- Spiritual warfare prayer (standing between satan and man).
- Revival prayer (change me to be more effective in the harvest).
- Evangelism prayer (prayer for the harvest and harvesters).

The subjects of prayer, burden and anointing are interrelated. Refer to Chart E-3, “Levels of Burden, Prayer and Anointing”, in Appendix 1.

-- From E. M. Bounds on Prayer

Prayer affects three different spheres of existence: the divine, the angelic, and the human. It puts God to work, it puts angels to work, and it puts people to work. It lays its hands upon God, angels and people. What a wonderful reach there is in prayer! It brings into play the forces of heaven and earth. God, angels, and people are subjects of this wonderful law of prayer, and all three deal with the possibilities and the results of prayer. God has placed Himself under the law of prayer, to such an extent that He is induced to work among people, in a way in which He does not work if they do not pray. Prayer takes hold of God and influences Him to work. Prayer puts God to work in all things prayed for. While man in his weakness and poverty waits, trusts, and prays, God undertakes the work. *“For since the world began no one has seen or heard of such a God as ours, who works for those who wait for him!” Isa. 64:4⁵*

- **The prophecies concerning the restoration of the Apostolic ministry of the early church promised for the last days, will be realized as they are prayed into fruition through effectual, fervent (powerful) dominion prayers.**

Casual Prayer Vs. Fervent Prayer With Fasting

In Judges, chapter 20, are demonstrated three levels of prayer for victory in battle. The children of Israel were ready to go to war and they knew that prayer was the prerequisite for victory.

The First Prayer

Judges 20:18, 23, 26-28

18 And the children of Israel arose, and went up to the house of God, and asked counsel of God, and said, which of us shall go up first to the battle against the children of Benjamin? And the Lord said, Judah shall go up first

The result: 22,000 children of Israel lost their lives in the first day of battle.

The Second Prayer

23 And the children of Israel went up and wept before the Lord until even, and asked counsel of the Lord, saying, shall I go up again to battle against the children of Benjamin my brother? And the Lord said, go up against him.

The result: 18,000 Israelites lost their lives on day two of battle.

-- From Adam Clarke's Commentary

It appears most evident that the Israelites did not seek the protection of God. They trusted in the goodness of their cause and in the multitude of their army. God humbled them, and delivered them into the hands of their enemies, and showed them that the race was not to the swift, nor the battle to the strong.⁵

The Third Prayer With Fasting

*26 Then all the children of Israel, and all the people, went up, and came unto the house of God, and wept, and **sat there before the Lord, and fasted that day until even**, and offered burnt offerings and peace offerings before the Lord.*

27 And the children of Israel ***inquired of the Lord***, (for the ark of the covenant of God was there in those days,
28 And Phinehas, the son of Eleazar, the son of Aaron, stood before it in those days,) saying, shall I yet again go out to battle against the children of Benjamin my brother, or shall I cease? And the Lord said, go up; for to morrow ***I will deliver them into thine hand.***

The result: This time they fasted, prayed, repented and offered sacrifices. They inquired of the Lord and waited in His presence all day until the assurance came. Then they went to war and God gave them the victory. Had they done this in their first prayer, 40,000 lives would have been spared.

-- **From Adam Clarke's Commentary**

Had they humbled themselves, fasted, and prayed, and offered sacrifices at first, they had not been discomfited.

[And fasted that day until even]. This is the first place where fasting is mentioned as a religious ceremony, or as a means of obtaining help from God. And in this case, and many since, it has been powerfully effectual. At present it is but little used; a strong proof that self-denial is wearing out of fashion.⁶

- **The key message of this story is the importance that God places on our dependence on Him and the benefits of effectual, fervent (powerful) prayer with fasting.**

4.2 Sacrifice in Fasting

Fasting is sacrifice. During fasting, we pay a price by giving up life's necessities, as well as its pleasures. The heart of fasting is sacrifice. All revivals of the past that shook nations, cities, and continents came through prayer and fasting.

Jesus, in His Sermon on the Mount, taught, "**when you fast...**" not "if you fast". For believers, then, **the question is not, "should I fast?"**, "**but will I fast?"** When we fast, "our Father which seeth in secret **shall reward us openly**".

There is an appetite that satisfies the natural man (son of man); it is driven by a hunger for things in our kingdom. However, the appetite that satisfies the spiritual man (son of God) is fueled by a hunger for the Kingdom of God. To be filled with His Kingdom, we must **take away (or fast)** from things in our kingdom.

Removing the pleasure of food and other pleasures puts God on notice that we are:

- More hungry for Him than for natural food.
- More hungry for fullness of joy than for natural pleasure.
- More desirous for spiritual rest than for our natural comfort.

Appetite for the things of God can be energized by prayer with fasting, which say to God: “I want the things of Your Kingdom more than anything in my kingdom.” Eating is one of the most essential needs and strongest cravings. To forsake food and seek God emphasizes His superior importance in our lives.

- **Fasting is decreasing our focus for physical food and increasing our desire for spiritual food -- the bread of life and the water of life.**

John 6:35

*35 Jesus said unto them, I am the **bread of life**: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.*

Rev. 21:6

*6 I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the **water of life** freely.*

Isa. 55:1

1 Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters, and he that hath no money; come ye, buy, and eat; yea, come, buy wine and milk without money and without price.

Fasting with the right motive intensifies prayer. Fasting and prayer lead us into a God-consciousness that opens the supernatural realm.

Fasting and prayer increase the dimension of charity (love in action to those in need) where the supernatural gifts of the Spirit operate: *“This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting”* (Mark 9:29).

Wesley Duewel said: “Fasting is still God’s chosen way to deepen and strengthen prayer. You will be the poorer spiritually and your prayer life will never be what God wants it to be until you practice the privilege of fasting. Our ability to perceive God’s direction in life is directly related to our ability to sense the inner promptings of His Spirit. God provides a specific activity to assist us in doing this. Men through whom God has worked greatly, have emphasized the significance of prayer with fasting.”

Charles Stanley said: “Fasting brings about a supernatural work in our lives. God will not entrust **supernatural power** to those whose lives are not under total control of the Holy Spirit.”

- **A properly conducted fast will make us spiritually stronger.**

Fasting will produce a healthier spiritual man. There is nothing like fasting with prayer to remove barriers and distractions from our spirits while cleansing the inner man. We can then hear with more clarity what the Spirit is saying to the church and to us as individuals. We can receive more revelation of His ways and His will.

- **A properly conducted fast will make us physically stronger.**

-- From Prescription for Nutritional Healing

Fasting rids the body of toxins, cleansing the liver, kidneys, and colon while purifying the blood. Fasting allows the organs to rest, facilitates healing, reverses the aging process, and promotes a longer and healthier life. Physical benefits of fasting include lower blood pressure and cholesterol level, resting the digestive system, allowing the body time to cleanse itself, relieves nervousness and tension, allows better sleep, and sharpens mental processes.⁷

Fasting is taking groceries from the carnal man and giving them to the spiritual man. This includes food and other pleasures.

- **A properly conducted fast will weaken the carnal man and strengthen the spiritual man. The one you feed the most will dominate and control your life.**

Types of Fasts

Refer to the following page for some of the different types of fasts.

Any type of fasting should consider medications being taken and a doctor's advice.

Types of Fasts

Type	Duration	Fasting is removing the pleasure of food
Water Only	1-3 Days	Never fast without water.
Liquids Only	1-40 Days	Water, vegetable and fruit juices, broth of boiled vegetables, liquid products such as Barley Life and All Day Energy Greens, etc., (no milk or digestible food).
Daniel's Fast - 1	21-40 Days	No meats, sweets or strong drink (no caffeine).
Daniel's Fast - 2	21-40 Days	Fresh fruit and vegetables (a more difficult and healthy fast).

Fasting Should Lead to Service

After we have fasted, we must go to work for Jesus Christ. The proof of our fasting is measured by the energy of our service afterward.

It is one thing to withhold food from oneself; it is another thing to give oneself in dedicated service. Fasting must lead to ministering to someone in need. D.L. Moody said, "Every Bible should be bound in shoe leather. We show our love to God, not by empty words, but by willing works."

How we are affecting the lost in our personal harvest field (our circle of influence) is a good measure of the work of the Holy Ghost in our life. This means what we allow the Holy Ghost to do through us, in carrying on the work of the Father.

The believer must hunger for a deeper walk, a deeper relationship with God (what God does for us and to us) driven by prayer and fasting. The depth of our relationship with God is directly related to our ability to effectively minister to the needs of others.

Fasting helps us to be better witnesses and workers in the harvest, as we minister to physical and spiritual needs.

- **When we minister to the needs of others:**
 - **Their needs are met.**
 - **God's needs are met:** (Ministering to others is doing it unto God).
 - **Our needs are met:** (As we work for God, He works for us).

Isa. 58:6-8, 10-14

6 Is not this the fast that I have chosen? . . .

*7 **Share your food** with the hungry, and **give shelter** to the homeless. **Give clothes** to those who need them, and do not hide from relatives who need your help.*

8 Then your salvation will come like the dawn, and your wounds will quickly heal. Your godliness will lead you forward, and the glory of the Lord will protect you from behind.

*10 **Feed the hungry**, and **help those in trouble**. Then your light will shine out from the darkness, and the darkness around you will be as bright as noon.*

*11 The Lord will guide you continually, giving you water when you are dry and **restoring your strength**. You will be like a well-watered garden, like an ever-flowing spring.*

*12 Some of you will **rebuild** the deserted ruins of your cities. Then you will be known as a builder of walls and a restorer of homes.*

*13 Keep the Sabbath day holy. Don't pursue your own interests on that day, but enjoy the Sabbath and speak of it with delight as the Lord's holy day. **Honor the Sabbath** in everything you do on that day, and don't follow your own desires or talk idly.*

14 Then the Lord will be your delight. I will give you great honor and satisfy you with the inheritance. NLT

- **Serving the Lord by doing His will is food that satisfies the spiritual man.**

John 4:31-35

31 In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat.

32 But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of.

33 Therefore said the disciples one to another, hath any man brought him ought to eat?

*34 Jesus saith unto them, **my meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.***

*35 Say not ye, there are yet four months, and then cometh **harvest**? Behold, I say unto you, lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are **white already to harvest.***

4.3 Sacrifice in Service

We must not become inwardly focused and be preoccupied with preparing for the rapture of the church. The most urgent thing is to prepare to better serve in the Father's business -- His harvest field! By serving in His business, we will be ready for the rapture!

We must be as dedicated to serving in the Father's business as we are to our employer's business. The standards we set in our career are the primary ones to measure our commitment to His Kingdom. On Judgment Day, possibly the harshest test will be our actions and how we worked in our kingdom compared to how we served in His Kingdom.

At the Judgment, the books will be opened; one will contain the deeds done in this life. One chapter will reveal actions in our kingdom, and one will disclose our actions in God's Kingdom. The dedication and the intensity for His Kingdom must be greater.

The last phase of a project nearing the final deadline with much unfinished work, is referred to as, "**crunch time**" -- a time for giving extra effort.

Concerning the Father's business, we are in the last phase of the battle and the harvest. The one message to be emphasized is: ***"It is crunch time"***; because we live at the end of the Church Age with so much work yet to do. Billions of lost souls need healing, deliverance and salvation. **It can no longer be business as usual.**

- **Times demand that our service in the Father's business exceed the intensity of our efforts of yesteryear.**

In this eleventh hour, the last call to the harvest is of utmost importance. It is like none other because there may not be another. The souls not won in this harvest may be eternally lost and believers who fail to get involved may not have another opportunity.

There are two exciting and eternal rewards of the last great endtime harvest (prophesied to supersede all others):

1. The ingathering of many lost souls who will be saved from an eternity in hell.
 2. Many saints, previously uninvolved or partially involved, will have an opportunity to serve at a greater level in the Father's business.
- **Salvation of the lost depends on the involvement of the saints and salvation of the saints depends on their involvement with the lost.**

There will be a mega, bountiful harvest, but there is not much time. As sure as God will do a **quick work in the harvest**, He will also do a **quick work in the harvester**. Those who have a great vision of the harvest and are taking actions to be a part of it, will be thrust into the **Father's business at a supernatural level.**

- **Those in the center of God's will in this final harvest will be used by Him in the supernatural to complete His purpose and work.**

The kingdom of satan is mobilizing its forces in battle against the church. Through the centuries, this same battle has been waged between right and wrong.

Rev. 12:12

12 Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

1 Peter 5:8

8 Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour.

The final battle between the forces of good and evil will be violent because it is satan's final stand to destroy the last great harvest of lost souls. Our adversary, the devil, will not attack believers with temptations of the flesh and obvious sins. He will work subtly to distract us in doing our own will, becoming self-centered and entertainment-centered. A righteous indignation must rise up in the spirit of every believer, urging us to a greater level of service,

The battle is the Lord's. It is His lost world, His work, and His business: *"Thus saith the LORD unto you, Be not afraid nor dismayed; for the battle is not yours, but God's."* It is God's will for us to spend these last few days of the Church Age completing His business which He exemplified in His brief ministry on earth:

- **Destroying the works of the devil** (1 John 3:8).
We must put on the whole armor and sharpen our swords for the final battle.
- **Seeking and saving the lost** (Matt. 18:11-13).
We must sharpen our sickle to reap the last harvest.

The Father's business is labor intensive; it depends on laborers. He has elected to work on earth through man. He has chosen us to execute His mission and is depending on us entirely. The harvest will be reaped only as we partner with Him as a servant ministering to the desperate needs of lost souls.

Let us sharpen our **sword for the last battle** and our **sickle for the last harvest**. Although we may not have been totally committed in past harvests, with God's help, we should resolve to diligently pursue His business with a sword in one hand and a sickle in the other.

The coming of Jesus Christ is so close that we should feel the warning and pull of the Spirit that will soon rapture the church. Until then, the Spirit is drawing us deeper into the harvest field, because it is the gathering place for the rapture. When the day is over and the harvest has ended, He will pick us up in His **harvest field -- the meeting place for the rapture**.

- **As a son of man -- we are about our business, the business of our kingdom. As a son of God -- we must be about our Father's business, the business of His Kingdom.**

We are not working for a church or an organization. Although we respect and need our spiritual leaders, we are not working for them. But we are serving our heavenly Father, the Great High Priest, the Great Physician, the Great Commander, the Lord of the harvest, the King of Kings.

Our Father's business is unique -- surpassing and superseding all others. There is no comparison to another because His eternal Kingdom is on a supernatural level.

- **The Kingdom of God, of which every believer is a part, holds a place of importance in time and history -- all other kingdoms, past, present, and future, pale in comparison.**

Growing in Sacrifice

God, grant us a greater understanding of the **privilege** to be called Your son and to **serve in the business of Your Kingdom**. Only eternity will reveal the great honor and blessing to have been a servant in the Father's business.

At each great crisis of our life, and especially when standing on the threshold of some new and enlarged sphere of God's calling and service, we should seek and receive a fresh anointing to fit us to fulfill its fresh demands. (The Biblical Illustrator)

* * * * *

There must first be a private anointing before there can be a public anointing. A private victory must precede a public one.

5. Growing in Anointing

In the Old Testament, prophets, priests, and kings were anointed with consecrating oil symbolizing their calling and preparation for specific and distinct service. Anointing was how a man was set apart for a divinely-appointed office. Prophets were to speak messages of God to the people. The priest was an intercessor between man and God, offering atoning sacrifices for sin. The king provided leadership for God's people. All were consecrated for divine service.

Christians are anointed by the Spirit of God that sets them apart for His purpose. Christians, described as “kings and priests” and a “royal priesthood” are empowered with God's ability to perform His Kingdom work. We are solemnly consecrated to the service of God.

- We are anointed as prophets to declare Him who has loved and saved us -- spreading the good news of the Gospel.
- We are anointed to be priests; mediators between God and man, serving as intercessors to a lost world,
- Our heavenly Father is the King of Kings; as His sons, we are kings with dominion over satan. In this role, it is His will that we partner with Him, destroying the works of satan and

bringing deliverance to those bound in sin. *“As my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.”*

-- **From The Biblical Illustrator**

Fresh Anointing: At each great crisis of our life, and especially when standing on the threshold of some new and enlarged sphere of God’s calling and service, we should **seek and receive a fresh anointing** to fit us to fulfill its fresh demands. There should be successive and **repeated anointings in our life-history** as our opportunities (and God’s will for our lives) widen out in ever-increasing circles.

There must be a constant anointing of God’s Spirit in our lives. You will have a thousand reasons for feeling yourself to be incompetent; and you might well throw down the staff of your calling, and leave the work, if you were not sure that your sufficiency is of God with His anointing.¹

In this chapter, we will address three progressive levels of anointing:

1. **Private anointing** begins with the new birth experience as it initiates and builds man’s relationship with God.
2. **Public anointing** is God working through man with His divine ability to affect the lives of others.
3. **Special anointing** (priestly anointing) is God’s divine ability working through the believer at the supernatural level with the gifts of the Spirit (healing, miracles, wisdom, knowledge, discernment, etc.).

5.1 Private Anointing

To discuss private anointing, we will examine the private anointing of two kings -- King Saul and King David.

King Saul's Private Anointing

The setting for King Saul's private anointing was unusual. Saul and his uncle were looking for lost donkeys. When they could not find them, they asked the prophet Samuel for help. God may also use a strange circumstance to bring us to our purpose.

1 Sam. 9:25, 27; 10:1, 6, 15, 16

25 And when they were come down from the high place into the city, Samuel communed with Saul upon the top of the house.

*27 And as they were going down to the end of the city, Samuel said to Saul, **bid the servant pass on before us, (and he passed on,) but stand thou still a while, that I may shew thee the word of God.***

1 Then Samuel took a vial of oil, and poured it upon his head, and kissed him, and said, is it not because the Lord hath anointed thee to be captain over his inheritance?

*6 And the spirit of the Lord will come upon thee, and thou shalt prophesy with them, and shalt be **turned into another man.***

15 And Saul's uncle said, tell me, I pray thee, what Samuel said unto you.

*16 And Saul said unto his uncle, he told us plainly that the asses were found. But of the matter of the kingdom, **whereof Samuel spake, he told him not.***

This was a private anointing; Saul alone was with the prophet of God. The anointing changed Saul into a new man.

Our private anointing will always be between us and God, and His purpose is to make us new. This will come by getting alone with God in our daily personal devotion.

2 Cor. 5:17

17 When someone becomes a Christian, he becomes a brand new

person inside. He is not the same anymore. A new life has begun!
TLB

- **There must first be a private anointing before there can be a public anointing. There must be a private victory, before there can be a public victory.**

This will come by waiting on God. Unlike instant food, instant credit, and instant results; the anointing comes by taking time waiting on God. Tarrying in His presence is sacrifice, but it brings anointing.

Isa. 40:31

*31 But **they that wait upon the Lord** shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.*

King David's Private Anointing

1 Sam. 16:1, 2, 10-13

*1 And the Lord said unto Samuel, how long wilt thou mourn for Saul, seeing **I have rejected him from reigning over Israel?** Fill thine horn with oil, and go, I will send thee to Jesse the Bethlehemite: for I have provided me a king among his sons.*

*2 And Samuel said, how can I go? If Saul hear it, he will kill me. And the Lord said, take an heifer with thee, and say, I am come to **sacrifice** to the Lord.*

10 Again, Jesse made seven of his sons to pass before Samuel. And Samuel said unto Jesse, The Lord hath not chosen these.

*11 And Samuel said unto Jesse, are here all thy children? And he said, there remaineth yet the **youngest, and, behold, he keepeth the sheep.** And Samuel said unto Jesse, send and fetch him: for we will not sit down till he come hither.*

12 And he sent, and brought him in. Now he was ruddy, and withal of a beautiful countenance, and goodly to look to. And the Lord said, arise, anoint him: for this is he.

*13 Then Samuel took the horn of oil, and anointed him in the midst of his brethren: and **the spirit of the Lord came upon David from that day forward.***

David's anointing was private with just his immediate family. David was not his dad's or his family's choice. He was so young and unqualified that he was not even considered. He was not very old, well trained, or experienced. But God told Samuel: "***Man looketh on the outward appearance, but the Lord looketh on the heart.***"

We should not limit ourselves because of inexperience, station in life, weaknesses, or limitations. We have often limited ourselves to natural talents and abilities or lack thereof, thus, limiting God's ability to work through us at the next level of anointing. In effect, we have allowed the devil to intimidate us and limit our efforts.

For everyone, God has a divine, eternal purpose superseding natural abilities. God chooses the weak to perform difficult tasks so that He will receive all the glory. God delights in creating something out of nothing -- no pre-existing materials. The God of creation cannot make something out of us until we become nothing.

When the Spirit came on David, he was forever changed from that day forward. We need to be changed, not for a moment, not for a week, but changed forever. We must have an encounter with God that brings radical and permanent change through the anointing.

5.2 Public Anointing

Public anointing is stepping into the dominion role, allowing God to work through man to affect the lives of others and fulfill His purpose.

To review public anointing, we will examine the public anointing of King Saul and King David.

Saul's Public Anointing

1 Sam. 10:21-24, 26

21 Then he brought each family of the tribe of Benjamin before the Lord, and the family of the Matrites was chosen. And finally Saul son of Kish was chosen from among them. But when they looked for him, he had disappeared!

*22 So they asked the Lord, "Where is he?" And the Lord replied, "**He is hiding** among the baggage."*

23 So they found him and brought him out, and he stood head and shoulders above anyone else.

*24 Then Samuel said to all the people, "This is the man the Lord has chosen as your king. No one in all Israel is like him!" And all the people shouted, "**Long live the king!**"*

*26 When Saul returned to his home at Gibeah, a **group of men whose hearts God had touched** went with him. NLT*

Although Saul earlier had been privately anointed, there was a public anointing process used by the prophet to confirm a king. When Saul was selected for public anointing, he was humble and hid to avoid public attention.

Saul's public anointing affected others. Likewise, others will be affected by this level of anointing in our lives but we must remain humble and protect the anointing of God.

King Saul was anointed in a special way to lead God's people. But he allowed success to make him proud and filled with his own ways. He began to rely on his own wisdom rather than on God. His pride became rebellion in disobeying the Word of God. In a warning applicable to us today, Samuel told Saul, "**Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice.**"

As a result of his pride and disobedience, King Saul lost his anointing and eventually died in disgrace.

1 Sam. 15:26, 28, 35; 16:1, 14

26 And Samuel I said unto Saul, I will not return with thee: for

*thou hast rejected the word of the Lord, and the Lord hath **rejected thee from being king** over Israel.*

28 And Samuel said unto him, The Lord hath rent the kingdom of Israel from thee this day, and hath given it to a neighbour of thine, that is better than thou.

35 And Samuel came no more to see Saul until the day of his death: nevertheless Samuel mourned for Saul: and the Lord repented that he had made Saul king over Israel.

*1 And the Lord said unto Samuel, how long wilt thou mourn for Saul, seeing **I have rejected him from reigning over Israel?** Fill thine horn with oil, and go, I will send thee to Jesse the Bethlehemite: **for I have provided me a king among his sons.***

*14 But **the spirit of the Lord departed from Saul**, and an evil spirit from the Lord troubled him.*

After many years of King Saul's public anointing, we see a tragedy; King Saul **lost the anointing of God**. Saul was born to be king, privately and publicly anointed, for special service. Given special opportunity and privilege, he let it slip away.

“Saul, you have lost the anointing and I have replaced you.” The saddest words penned in the Bible -- **I can't use you any more, I am replacing you with someone else -- someone who:**

- Is seeking Me.
- Will do all of My will.
- Is hungry for Me and My ways.
- Loves Me with all their heart, mind and soul.
- Is thirsty for Me, “*As the hart panteth after the water brooks, so panteth my soul after thee, O God. My soul thirsteth for God, for the living God.*”

Saul was born to be king, but he lost his anointing and his crown. When he was wounded on the battlefield, in disgrace he committed suicide. Satan not only destroyed King Saul, but he humiliated him in his defeat in battle and in his death. Through King Saul's disobedience, his sons, and many others also lost their lives.

- **Never forget, the devil not only wants to destroy us and our families but he also wants to humiliate us.**

Rev. 3:10-11

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

There is a crown with our name on it. It is ours to keep or lose. We must hold it tightly, not yielding to anybody or anything. We must treasure God's anointing, refusing to allow our crown to go to someone else. Our destiny is in our hands.

King David's Public Anointing

A period of 10-12 years elapsed between David's private anointing and his public one. It was a time of testing and experiencing private victories, for public victories must be preceded by private victories.

-- From The Biblical Illustrator

King David: David got his first training for his high place amid the lowly duties of his shepherd life. I suppose we shall learn some day, that the faithful doing of our actual work, the doing it for use, and not merely for gain, from love of God and love of men, is recognized by Heaven as the surest preparation for future promotion and enlarged service. Then we shall have no need to seek change of place, in order to be ready for God's prophet with his horn of anointing oil, but only "to keep our heart right."¹ (J. Clifford D.D.)

The fruit of a personal character developed in humble, unobtrusive natural life is seen to be better than the more showy clusters forced by public demands. Those who solicit public office are far too often selfish, not self-denying, and even in the Church there is much vain ambition. Men are lifted into places they cannot fill, and after keeping their seats

unsteadily for a time they disappear into ignominy.¹ (R.A. Watso)

David experienced some private victories not witnessed by anyone. The anointing of the Lord enabled him to do more than he could have alone. He killed a bear and lion that came to take a lamb out of his flock. In his testimony of this victory, he acknowledged that it was God that delivered him.

Then David was thrust into a seemingly impossible situation in full view of the Israelite and Philistine armies. When God sought a man to fight the blasphemous enemy and every warrior in Israel's army feared the challenge, young David volunteered. David didn't let God down and God didn't let David down. In the strength of the Lord, David was invincible on the battlefield.

This breakthrough transitioned David from a private victory to a public victory. David was just a young shepherd, not a trained or gifted warrior, but the anointing power of the Lord enabled him to succeed on the battlefield. God anointed David's weapon to accomplish more than a rock and sling could. The imposing giant was killed with divine ability propelling and guiding the rock to Goliath's head.

David's greatest desire was to make Jehovah's name great among the nations. Although it was recognized in Israel that God's hand was on David, more years elapsed before being publicly anointed as the king of Israel. There would be years of fleeing from jealous King Saul who tried to kill him on numerous occasions. More trial and testing prepared him for the purpose and plan of God.

Finally at the age of 30, following King Saul's death, David was **publicly anointed** to be king over the Southern Kingdom of Israel, the tribes of Judah and Benjamin.

2 Sam. 2:4

4 And the men of Judah came, and there they anointed David king over the house of Judah.

May we learn from this story that men may be anointed of God long before it is publicly declared. God can put His secret into their heart long before He puts the crown upon their brow. When others see a shepherd boy, God may see a king.

Shepherd Boy

(Verse 1)

“One by one, Jesse’s sons, stood before the prophet,
Their father knew a king would soon be found.
Each one passed, except the last, no one thought to call him,
For surely, he would never wear a crown.

(Chorus)

But when others see a shepherd boy, God may see a king,
Even though your life seems filled with ordinary things.
In just a moment, He can touch you and everything will change,
When others see a shepherd boy, God may see a king.

(Verse 2)

Well, he wasn’t the oldest, wasn’t the strongest,
Chosen on that day.
Yet the giant fell, and nations trembled,
When they stood in his way.”²

5.3 Special Anointing (King, Prophet, Priest)

As demonstrated above, public anointing is God working through man in a dominion role to affect the lives of others.

Special anointing, a step beyond public anointing, is God's divine ability working through the believer at an increased supernatural level. This involves duplicating the ministry of Christ (section I, chapter 2), and the restoration of Apostolic ministry (section II, chapters 3 and 4). King David's anointing included the supernatural power of God working in his life through the offices of king, prophet and priest. God's will is for us to partner with Him in the supernatural with the gifts of the Spirit (faith, healing, miracles, wisdom, knowledge, discernment, etc.).

David first experienced a private anointing. Ten years later he was publicly anointed as king of Judah (two tribes). Then seven years later came his special anointing to preside over all twelve tribes of Israel. This brought unity to Israel as the Southern Kingdom and Northern Kingdom were united. David's special anointing not only included serving in the office of the king, but increased to include the office of prophet and priest.

David's Third Anointing to be King

2 Sam. 5:1, 3, 5

1 Then came all the tribes of Israel to David unto Hebron, and spake, saying, behold, we are thy bone and thy flesh.

3 So all the elders of Israel came to the king to Hebron; and king David made a league with them in Hebron before the Lord: and they anointed David king over Israel.

*5 He reigned thirty and three years **over all Israel and Judah.***

2 Sam. 5:17-19

17 But when the Philistines heard that they had anointed David king over Israel, all the Philistines came up to seek David; and David heard of it, and went down to the hold.

18 The Philistines also came and spread themselves in the valley

of Rephaim.

*19 And David inquired of the Lord, saying, shall I go up to the Philistines? Wilt thou deliver them into mine hand? And the **Lord** said unto David, go up: for I will doubtless deliver the Philistines into thine hand.*

When the Philistines heard that David was king over all of Israel, they came to battle. But under the protection of God's anointing, King David was victorious over his enemies.

Satan will always attempt to destroy the anointed of the Lord. He tried to kill baby Moses, the anointed leader of Israel. He tried to kill baby Jesus, the anointed Savior of the world. As we move into greater dimensions of God's anointing, satan will fight to intimidate, discourage and destroy us.

Empowered by the anointing of God, we can defeat the enemy and put him to flight: "*When the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord will lift up a standard against him and put him to flight*" (Isa. 59:19). AMP

Progressive Levels of Anointing

In the life of David there were progressive levels of anointing as he pursued God's will:

1. Private Anointing (witnessed only by his family).

2. Public Anointing (witnessed by two tribes of Israel).

3. Special Anointing

- Anointed to be king over all Israel (witnessed by 12 tribes).
- Anointed as a prophet (witnessed by every subsequent generation). King David's writings record many prophecies concerning Jesus Christ.
- Anointed as a priest. As priest, he led sacrifices of praise and worship (vs. animal sacrifices) in the Tabernacle of David (vs. the Tabernacle of Moses). The worship in this tabernacle was a type of the worship that God desires for His church today: "*I will build again the tabernacle of David*" (Acts 15:16-17).

-- **From Prophecies of King David**

David was a king and a prophet, and **also to a certain extent a priest**. He became the prototype (a model), as a precursor of the greatest of Kings, Prophet and High Priest -- Christ the Savior, the descendant of David. The personal experience of King David, and also the poetic gift with which he was endowed, gave him the opportunity to describe the character and feat of the coming Messiah in a whole row of psalms with unprecedented clarity and vividness.³

In the Old Testament, three offices were anointed of God: king, prophet and priest:

King - *And Nathan said to David, Thus saith the Lord God of Israel, I **anointed thee king** over Israel, and I delivered thee out of the hand of Saul (2 Sam. 12:7).*

Prophet - *Then the Lord told him, "Go back by the desert road to Damascus, and when you arrive . . . anoint Jehu (son of Nimshi) to be king of Israel, and **anoint Elisha** (the son of Shaphat of Abel-meholah) to replace you as my **prophet**." (1 Kings 19:15-16).*

Priest - *Thou shalt put them upon Aaron your brother and on his sons with him; and shalt **anoint them**, and consecrate them, and sanctify them, that they may minister unto me in the **priest's office** (Ex. 28:41).*

Some duties of those anointed offices include the following:

King

"One who reigns (exercising dominion) over a state or territory (domain), usually for life and by hereditary right."⁴

"One that holds a preeminent position; *especially*: a chief among competitors."⁵

Prophet

“A person who speaks by divine inspiration or as the interpreter through whom the will of God is expressed; an effective spokesman for a cause, doctrine, or group.”⁴

“One gifted with more than ordinary spiritual and moral insight; an effective or leading spokesman for a cause, doctrine, or group.”⁵

Priest

“A person having the authority to perform and administer religious rites.”⁴

“One authorized to perform the sacred rites of a religion especially as a mediatory agent between humans and God.”⁵

The turban was worn by the high priest, the crown by the king, and these two offices were kept separate. The priests came from the family of Levi and kings from Judah. The third holy office, (prophet) could come from any tribe. There were priests who were also prophets (Ezekiel and Zechariah) and one king who was a priest and a prophet -- David.

Special Anointing as King

After David's special anointing as king over all twelve tribes, he became the most outstanding leader to ever rule Israel. Some valuable qualities that made him a great king were: love for the people, fairness, wisdom, courage, and, most importantly, a strong faith and love for God. David's greatest desire was not to make a name for himself, but to make God's name great in all the earth. One of King David's actions that greatly pleased God was to **return the ark of the covenant to the center of Israel's worship.**

The ark of the covenant had been removed from the Tabernacle of Moses many years previously. When Israel was losing a battle with the Philistines, they brought the ark from the tabernacle into their midst, believing superstitiously, that its presence would give them victory. However, they were miserably defeated and the ark was

taken captive and put into the temple of Dagon. The Philistines, however, soon returned it to Israel because of God's judgments that were occurring. It ended up in a house in the border town of Kiriath Jearim, and remained there for 20 years.

King Saul did not have a heart for the Lord, so he ignored the estrangement of the ark from its proper place. He made no attempt to restore it to the center of Israel's worship.

But King David was determined to correct this situation because his heart was like the heart of God. Committed to bringing God back into the heart of his nation, he recognized the symbolic significance of the ark in accomplishing this purpose. The top priority of his kingship, recorded in Psalms 132, indicates David "swore to the Lord" that he would not sleep in a bed until he could provide a proper "dwelling place for the Mighty One of Jacob."

1 Chron. 15:1

1 And David made him houses in the city of David, and prepared a place for the Ark of God, and pitched for it a tent.

King David made a spectacular event of the ark's return to Israel. He summoned all of Israel to the celebration. He appointed over 600 priests to participate.

1 Chron. 15:16, 25, 27, 28

16 King David also ordered the Levite leaders to organize the singers into an orchestra, and they played loudly and joyously upon psaltries, harps, and cymbals.

25 Then David and the elders of Israel and the high officers of the army went with great joy to the home of Obed-edom to take the ark to Jerusalem.

27 David, the Levites carrying the ark, the singers, and Chenaniah the song leader were all dressed in linen robes. David also wore a linen ephod.

28 So the leaders of Israel took the ark to Jerusalem with shouts of joy, the blowing of horns and trumpets, the crashing of cymbals, and loud playing on the harps and zithers. TLB

Special Anointing as Prophet

In addition to being a king, the prophetic anointing was on King David's life. He became one of the greatest prophetic voices pointing to the coming Messiah. David recorded enough prophecies to be included with the major prophets. Through the telescope of prophecy, he unfolds the revelation of the coming Messiah, Jesus Christ. Some of these 92 prophecies are summarized on the following page.

Prophecies of King David

Prophecies	OT Scripture	NT Fulfillment
Political/religious leaders would conspire against the Messiah.	Psalms 2:2	Matt. 26:3-4 Mark 3:6
The Messiah would be raised from the dead and crowned King.	Psalms 2:7	Acts 13:30-33 Rom. 1:3-4
The Messiah's body would not see corruption (natural decay).	Psalms 16:8-10	Acts 13:35-37
The Messiah would be despised and rejected by His own.	Psalms 22:6	Luke 23:21-23
The Messiah would be made a mockery.	Psalms 22:7	Matt. 27:39
The Messiah would be abandoned by His disciples.	Psalms 22:11	Mark 14:50
The Messiah crucified: His hands and feet would be pierced.	Psalms 22:16	Matt. 27:38
The Messiah's bones would not be broken.	Psalms 22:17	John 19:32-33
The soldiers would cast lots for the Messiah's clothes.	Psalms 22:18	John 19:23-24
The Messiah would ascend into heaven.	Psalms 68:18	Luke 24:51 Eph. 4:8
The Messiah would be offered gall mingled with vinegar while dying.	Psalms 69:21	Matt. 27:34
The Messiah would come from the lineage of David.	Psalms 89:29, 35, 36	Matt. 1:1
The Messiah would calm the stormy sea.	Psalms 107:28-29	Matt. 8:24-26
The Messiah's betrayer would be replaced by another.	Psalms 109:8	Acts 1:20-26
The Messiah would be the "Stone" rejected by the builders.	Psalms 118:22	Matt. 21:42-43

Special Anointing as Priest

Amazingly, David took the ark to Jerusalem rather than to the Holy of Holies in the Tabernacle of Moses at Gibeon. David provided a new tabernacle in Jerusalem and placed the ark inside. Under his leadership and the anointing of the Spirit, he organized a new concept of praise and worship, introducing musical instruments for worship. Special psalms of praise were written and sung. Special priests were appointed to minister continually before the ark; formerly, in the Tabernacle of Moses only the High Priest could minister before the ark once a year.

The Tabernacle of David is the name given to the tent David set up on Mount Zion. It was the center of a new order of joyful worship sharply contrasting the solemn worship of Moses' Tabernacle. Instead of animals, the sacrifices offered at David's Tabernacle were **praise, joy and thanksgiving** (Psalms 95:2; 100:4; 141:2). The ark was placed in an open area unobstructed by a veil barring the way into God's presence as it had in Moses' Tabernacle.

Although King David was not a Levitical Priest, he served the Lord in this newly designed priesthood, with Levites ministering before the ark. He reached across the dispensation of the Law to our day of worship, designing a new tabernacle, sacrifices of worship, and a new order of Levites ministering unto the Lord continuously (24 hours a day). They worshipped and honored the Lord through: psalms, singing, shouting, dancing, praising, worshipping, thanksgiving, seeking the Lord, joyful rejoicing, clapping hands, lifting up hands, and with all manner of musical instruments.

Ps. 150:1-6

*1 Praise ye the Lord. Praise God **in his sanctuary**: praise him in the firmament of his power.*

2 Praise him for his mighty acts: praise him according to his excellent greatness.

*3 Praise him with the sound of the **trumpet**: praise him with the **psaltery and harp**.*

*4 Praise him with the **timbrel** and **dance**: praise him with **stringed instruments** and **organs**.*

*5 Praise him upon the **loud cymbals**: praise him upon the **high sounding cymbals**.*

6 Let every thing that hath breath praise the Lord. Praise ye the Lord.

The Tabernacle of David Restored

When the Samaritans and Gentiles received the Word, this caused a great commotion in the church. The apostles and elders, who were all Jews, met to consider this matter. At this meeting Apostle James interpreted what the prophet Amos had written about over 700 years before (Amos 9:11-12).

Acts 15:16-17

*16 After this I will return, and will **build again the tabernacle of David**, which is fallen down; and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up:*

17 That the residue of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles, upon whom my name is called, saith the Lord, who doeth all these things.

-- From The Tabernacle of David

The Tabernacle of David is a type of the worship of the Church. Jesus fulfilled the sacrificial system of the Old Covenant by His death on the cross (Hebrews 1:3, 7:27, 9:12, 9:24-28). The sacrifices of the Church, the New Covenant priesthood, are the sacrifices of praise, joy and thanksgiving (Hebrews 13:15, 1 Peter 2:9). In addition to the worship of the Church, the Tabernacle of David points to the proclamation and authority of Christ through His Church, thus **foreshadowing the priestly, kingly and prophetic ministries of the Church** (Revelation 1:6, 5:10, 19:10, Acts 2:17, 1 Corinthians 14:1,3-5, 24-25, 29, 39).

What David did, typically is a picture, a model of the New Testament Church. Through Jesus, we are made a royal

priesthood (1 Peter 2:5-9, Heb. 13:15). We have access to God's throne (Heb. 10:19, Heb 4:16). We are to worship according to the pattern that God gave David (1 Cor.14:26, Eph. 5:19, Col. 3:16).⁶

-- From The Tabernacle of David

We are in the midst of an Apostolic Reformation and there are numerous things occurring due to the season we are in. We see revelation springing forth in the midst of the church as people realize that all of life is holy unto the Lord. People are beginning to see that it is God's purpose and will for them to rule and reign and establish the kingdom of God in their sphere of influence.

David so desired the presence and communion with God that he established a new order of worship in a new tabernacle. This order of worship replaced the worship found in the Tabernacle of Moses. It was a type and shadow pointing to the New Testament Church.

There is a Davidic generation today that God is calling forth. He desires that we follow in David's footsteps. This is the generation that has to pay a price and expand the kingdom.

Our Lord is looking for those today with the character to whom He can entrust with anointing for the supernatural.⁶

King David was a type of Jesus Christ who fulfilled the offices of king, priest and prophet. The mission of Jesus Christ, recorded in His first message in the temple, is still the mission of the church and every believer.

Luke 4:18

*18 The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because He hath **anointed** me to **preach the gospel** to thee; He hath sent me to **heal the brokenhearted**, to **preach deliverance to the captives**, and*

recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised.

The Old Testament mirrors God's plan for us as New Testament believers. Born again of the water and Spirit, we became sons of God. God wants every believer to grow in anointing, to more effectively carry on His mission and Kingdom business here on earth.

In the Old Testament, only a few men were anointed kings, priests and prophets. But today in the New Testament church, it is God's will for **every believer to be a holy, anointed vessel** for use in His Kingdom:

- *"These signs shall follow them that **believe**. In my name they shall cast out devils . . . lay hands on the sick and they shall recover" (Mark 16:17-18).*
- *"He that **believeth** on me . . . greater works than these shall ye do" (John 14:12).*
- *"Ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood" (1 Pet. 2:9).*
- *"Hath made us kings and priests . . ." (Rev. 1:6).*

-- From Barnes' Notes

Revelation 1:6 And hath made us kings and priests unto God. In 1 Peter 2:9 the same idea is expressed by saying of Christians that they are "a royal priesthood." This idea is expressed here by saying that Christ had made us in fact kings and priests; that is, Christians are exalted to the dignity and are invested with the office, implied in these words. The word "kings," as applied to them, refers to the exalted rank and dignity which they will have; to the fact that they, in common with their Savior, will reign triumphant over all enemies; and that, having gained a victory over sin and death and hell, they may be represented as reigning together. The word "priests" refers to the fact that they are engaged in the holy service of God, or that they offer to him acceptable worship.⁷

It is God's will for His sons to minister to the needs of others, by partnering with Him, as an anointed:

King - Serving with God in His Kingdom with His authority and power accomplishing His will and work on earth.

Prophet - Declaring the message of deliverance, salvation and the endtime prophecies of Christ's soon coming.

Priest - A holy man serving as an intercessor to our lost world. A worshipper involved in the rebuilding of the Tabernacle of David.

Physician - Healing the hurting of our generation, with God's ability (anointing) working in our lives.

Soldier - Fighting the good fight of faith and engaging in spiritual warfare against the kingdom of satan.

Our calling is to grow in the anointing (God's divine ability).

Regardless of the positions God calls us to, there must be a continual growth in our anointing (like King David) to fulfill God's will. Such continued growth results through hungering for more of Him and dissatisfaction with the ordinary. It will only come through:

- Growth in our love for God
- Growth in our obedience to God's will
 - Growth in the passion and burden of the Lord
 - Growth in sacrifice of prayer, fasting and service

Our desperately lost world deserves to see God's supernatural power. Our world needs to:

- See an anointed life
- Hear an anointed voice
- Feel an anointed prayer
- See the supernatural hand of God working through man

-- **From The Biblical Illustrator**

God's choice and preparation of men.

Who of you will be His anointed prophet and priest? Care you not for the future of His kingdom? Is there no David whose spirit is fired by the outshining of their conviction and the best of their enthusiasm for the salvation of men? Seize your privilege, and hand on to unborn generations the gifts of vision and power the Eternal has bestowed upon you.¹

- **Our generation needs some Davids with special anointing; people after God's own heart whose greatest desire is to make their God's name great.**

Our desperately lost generation needs some Davids who will:

- Pursue a relationship with God until they become people after God's own heart.
 - Embrace the plan of God, enduring fiery trial and divine delay designed to produce Christian character and spiritual growth.
 - Experience private victories without seeking acclaim.
 - Be willing to risk their lives for the cause of Jesus Christ.
 - Perform in a dominion role to defeat the enemy, rescuing souls held in bondage.
- **Our hurting and hopeless generation needs some anointed giant killers!**

*In the brotherhood, there must be **unity** in essentials,
tolerance in non-essentials and **charity** in all things.*

* * * * *

*The greatest need of the Christian is a fresh revival
of the royal law where the weights, distractions and
hindrances drop from our lives and we receive the
beautiful, clean, white dove of the Spirit with
the gift of pure charity.*

6. Growing in Charity

Loving God is the foundation of all Christian living and service. In this chapter, we will discuss charity as **love in action to our brother** (everyone on earth) or **our neighbor** (anyone in need). Everyone on earth is our brother because we have the same heavenly Father.

Mal. 2:10

*10 Don't we all come from **one Father**? Aren't we all created by the same God? MSG*

Rom. 12:10

10 Love one another with brotherly affection [as members of one family], giving precedence and showing honor to one another. AMP

Luke 6:27, 32, 35

*27 But I say unto you which hear, **Love your enemies**, do good to them which hate you.*

32 For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them.

*35 But **love ye your enemies**, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, **and ye shall be the children of the Highest.***

Many people have the mistaken idea that Christian love is a feeling, a special kind of “religious emotion” that makes us reach out and accept others. Although emotion is involved, **Christian love is an act of the will** -- treating others the way we would like to be treated.

Self love is a trait of man’s fallen nature. God’s way is to love Him first, others second, and ourselves as little as possible. The world’s way demands that we love ourselves first, others second, and leaves God out completely. He who is richest in the love of God will have the greatest ability to love his family, his neighbor, his country, and his world.

- **The importance of loving your neighbor was stressed by Jesus when He placed it on the same level as loving Him.**

Matt. 22:37-40

37 Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.

38 This is the first and great commandment.

*39 And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt **love thy neighbour as thyself**.*

40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

Matt. 22:40

40 All the other commandments and all the demands of the prophets stem from these two laws and are fulfilled if you obey them. Keep only these and you will find that you are obeying all the others. TLB

Furthermore, Jesus stressed this by saying when we minister to anyone in need, we are ministering to His needs: **“Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me”** (Matt. 25:40).

- **Jesus ranked loving others on the same level as loving Him:**
 - How we love God is to love His children (lost and saved).
 - How to do something for God is to do something for one of His needy children.

Charity is the love of God flowing through us to others. It is an act of goodwill, voluntarily giving help. Thomas Aquinas said, “Charity is the movement of the soul in loving God and our neighbor.”

Charity is the intense deep devotion for someone. In its purest form it would motivate someone to give their life for a cause or a person. Charity is inconveniencing self for someone else’s benefit. When we minister to others, it always requires a sacrifice of time, energy or finances.

- **Genuine charity has two components -- compassion and care.**

Compassion is the Emotion

Compassion is the sympathetic consciousness of others’ distress and a desire to alleviate it. It is also the relational skill to see beyond the external and feel the internal. It is deep empathy for their suffering accompanied by a strong urge to help.

Care is the Action:

- To protect against need or lack.
- Feeling great responsibility for someone’s welfare that forces actions providing safety and comfort.

Refer to Chart G-26, “Love -- Definition (Compassion and Care)”, in Appendix 1.

The Compassion and Care of Jesus

Jesus set the example when He came to earth to **see and feel** (compassion) and **touch and heal** (care).

Matt. 14:14

*14 And Jesus went forth, and **saw** a great multitude, and was **moved with compassion** toward them, and he **healed their sick**.*

Matt. 20:34

*34 So Jesus had **compassion on them**, and **touched** their eyes: and immediately their eyes **received sight**, and they followed him.*

Mark 1:41

*41 And Jesus, **moved with compassion**, put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will; **be thou clean**.*

- **Our work in the harvest field should be like Jesus with compassion (weeping) and care (reaping).**

Luke 19:41

*41 And when he was **come near**, he **beheld** the city and **wept** over it.*

Ps. 126:5-6

*5 They that **sow in tears** shall **reap in joy**.*

*6 He that goeth forth and **weepeth**, bearing precious seed, shall doubtless come again with rejoicing, **bringing his sheaves** with him.*

- **There is only one commandment for the Christian to observe -- “Love others as much as we love ourselves”.**

Apostle Paul combines the requirements for Christians into this **one commandment -- to love others as ourselves**. How we can do this is to love God with all our heart, mind and strength, allowing the love of God to flow through us to others.

Gal. 5:14

*14 For **all the law is fulfilled in one word**, even in this; Thou shalt **love thy neighbour as thyself**.*

*14 For the whole Law can be summed up in this **one command**: “Love others as you love yourself.” TLB*

1 Cor. 13:13

*13 And now abideth faith, hope, **charity**, these three; but the greatest of these is **charity**.*

Growing in Charity

Mark 12:31

31 The second commandment is: “You must love others as much as yourself.” No other commandments are greater than these. TLB

1 John 4:12, 20, 21

*12 . . . If we **love one another**, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us.*

*20 He that **loveth not his brother** whom he hath seen, **how can he love God** whom he hath not seen?*

*21 And this commandment have we from him, That he who loveth God **love his brother** also.*

Rom. 12:10

*10 Be kindly affectioned one to another with **brotherly love**; in honour preferring one another.*

1 John 3:14

*14 We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we **love the brethren**. He that loveth not his brother abideth in death.*

1 John 2:10

*10 He that **loveth his brother** abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of stumbling in him.*

Heb. 13:1

*1 Let **brotherly love** continue.*

1 Peter 4:7-8

7 But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, and watch unto prayer.

*8 Above all things have **intense and unfailing love for one another**, for love covers a multitude of sins [forgives and disregards the offenses of others]. AMP*

Col. 3:12-14

*So, chosen by God for this new life of love, dress in the wardrobe God picked out for you: compassion, kindness, humility, quiet strength, discipline. . . And regardless of what else you **put on**,*

wear love. It's your basic, all-purpose garment. Never be without it. MSG

Eph. 4:30-32

30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice:

32 And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

Gal. 5:6

6 For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love.

Jesus' Message at the Last Supper

Jesus and His disciples had eaten the last supper. Judas had gone out into the night to make arrangements with the high priest for the betrayal of Jesus. Jesus is imparting His last message -- His last words to His disciples before His death on the cross.

John 13:34-35

34 A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.

35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

The Royal Law

James 2:8-9

8 If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well:

9 But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors.

James 2:8

8 Yes indeed, it is good when you truly obey our Lord's royal command found in the Scriptures: "Love your neighbor as yourself." TLB

-- **From Jamieson, Fausset, and Brown Commentary**

Royal - the law that is king of all laws, as He is King of Kings: the sum of the Ten Commandments. The great King is love: His law is the royal law of love. He is no respecter of persons; to respect persons is at variance with Him and His law.¹

-- **From Adam Clarke's Commentary**

The word royal (basilikos) is used to signify anything that is of general concern, is suitable to all, and necessary for all, as brotherly love is. This commandment, "*Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*", is a royal law, not only because it is ordained of God, and proceeds from his kingly authority over men, but because it is so useful, suitable, and necessary to the present state of man. It was given us particularly by Christ himself, John 13:34; 15:12, who is our King, as well as Prophet and Priest. It should ever put us in mind of his authority over us, and our subjection to him. As the regal state is the most excellent for secular dignity and civil utility that exists among men, hence, we give the epithet royal to whatever is excellent, noble, grand, or useful.²

The **royal law** in Scripture requires us to love our neighbors as ourselves. God exalted this law to a position of a royal decree, handed down by Himself -- the King of Kings.

In times past, upon any British Royal Navy vessel, ropes contained a scarlet cord running through them. That scarlet thread was an identification mark declaring the rope to be property of the government. Without that scarlet cord, it was just another rope, but with the scarlet thread present, it was a royal rope.

There is a scarlet thread, the royal law of love, that runs throughout Scripture from Genesis to Revelation. If the scarlet thread is removed, it is just another book. But because that scarlet thread is present, it is a **royal Book** handed down by the King.

The doctrinal truth of salvation is so valuable, simple and plain in Scripture. It is repentance of our sins, baptism in the name of Jesus

Christ, for the remission of sins, the infilling of the Holy Ghost, and then living a life of holiness. This is the life-changing message that the world needs to hear.

- **While we emphasize the doctrine of salvation, we must not forget the importance of love, because love is the bridge over which truth is transported.**

It is possible that the church today is similar to the **church of Ephesus** described in Revelation 2. We must be careful that the trends of the Ephesians' church are not repeated in our lives. They were commended for many good things, but they had "*left their first love*" -- **love for God and others.**

Rev. 2:1-7

1 Write this letter to the angel of the church in Ephesus. This is the message from the one who holds the seven stars in his right hand, the one who walks among the seven gold lamp stands:

*2 I know all the things you do. I have seen your **hard work** and your **patient endurance**. I know you **don't tolerate evil people**. You have examined the claims of those who say they are apostles but are not. You have discovered they are liars. (**Taken a stand against false doctrine**).*

*3 You have **patiently suffered** for me without quitting.*

*4 **But I have this complaint against you.** You don't love me or each other as you did at first!*

*5 Look how far you have fallen from your first love! **Turn back to me again and work as you did at first.** If you don't, I will come and remove your lamp stand from its place among the churches.*

6 But there is this about you that is good: You hate the deeds of the immoral Nicolatans, just as I do.

*7 Anyone who is willing to hear should **listen to the Spirit and understand what the Spirit is saying to the churches.** Everyone who is victorious will eat from the tree of life in the paradise of God. NLT*

Growing in Charity

The Ephesians church, planted by the Apostle Paul, was famous. It was highly commended for many good things:

- Diligence in duty -- good works and faithful labor.
- Patience in suffering.
- Zeal against evil and defense of the truth.

So many good things were written about the church in Ephesus, that it seems they were almost perfect. But God judged, *“I have somewhat against you,”* only one thing against you -- **“you have left your first love.”** The royal law identification mark was missing; the scarlet thread was gone.

For that reason, the Lord said their doctrine of salvation was correct, they were living righteous and holy, they had resisted false doctrine and false apostles, but were not pleasing Him. They were deficient in love for Him and others. They were lacking only in obedience to the **royal law**.

This deficiency was so serious that God rebuked and commanded them to repent and return to their first love or else He would remove their candlestick out of its place. This is the gravest of warning in all of Scripture because when someone's light is taken away by God, they are left in darkness and hopelessly lost.

Therefore, we must give great diligence to guarding and protecting the scarlet thread. The most dangerous time is when we have it all together and are secure in our doctrine, but the scarlet thread is beginning to fade.

The Lord Jesus Christ has given us an identity mark, a scarlet thread of charity, to be woven into our lives whereby all the world will know we are His disciples.

- Without doctrine, we will not be saved.
- Without holy living, we will not be saved.

He did not declare that doctrine or holiness would be how all men would know we are His disciples, but rather by the love that we have for one another.

Loving God with all of our being is foundational to all Christian service. Yet, He did not say this would be the identifier that we are His disciples. He said, ***“By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples if ye have love one for another.”***

It is easier to love God than it is to love some people. But, He declared others will recognize that we are His disciples only as we love one another.

Apostle Paul emphasizes the importance of charity in his writing to the Corinthians. Chapter 12 describes the supernatural gifts of the Spirit available to spirit-filled believers.

Chapter 13 elevates charity above all of these wonderful gifts because they only work through the charity channel.

1 Cor. 12:31

31 But earnestly desire and zealously cultivate the greatest and best gifts and graces (the higher gifts and the choicest graces). And yet I will show you a still more excellent way [one that is better by far and the highest of them all -- charity]. AMP

1 Cor. 13:13

*13 And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but **the** greatest of these is charity.*

-- From Matthew Henry's Commentary

Here the apostle shows what more excellent way he meant, or had in view, in the close of the former chapter, namely, charity, or, as it is commonly elsewhere rendered, love (agape). This is love in its fullest and most extensive meaning, **true love to God and man**, a benevolent disposition of mind towards our fellow-Christians, growing out of sincere and fervent devotion to God. This living

principle of all duty and obedience is the more excellent way of which the apostle speaks, preferable to all gifts. Without love the most glorious gifts are nothing.³

The gifts of the Spirit are ineffective in our life without the love of Jesus Christ baptizing us until we can love our neighbor as ourselves. Apostle Paul states that without charity it is as sounding brass and a tinkling symbol -- meaningless motion and noise.

Love has two arms. One of them reaches upward to Him and the other one reaches outward to them. Our real love for Him is reflected in our charitable actions for them -- our commitment to the royal law.

- **First, it is passion for Him and then compassion for them.**

This world is going to be lost if it is not reached for Jesus Christ, with the doctrinal truths of God's Word. But the Word of God is not meant to be argued or debated -- how useless it is to do so. First, the bridge of love must be built from God to us and then from us to them.

Doctrine alone will not save us. The love of God brings us to the doctrine – *“For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten son.”* It was love that purchased the salvation plan. Only our **true love for God** will keep us in complete obedience to His will, ensuring our salvation. We will be saved as we embrace the love of God and doctrine. We will be lost if we get it all together doctrinally yet lack the love of God.

- **Love brings us to salvation and sustains it by God working something beautiful and wonderful in our lives -- the ability to love others.**

John 15:10-14, 16, 17

*10 If you obey my commands, you will **remain in my love**, just as I have obeyed my Father's commands and remain in his love.*

11 I have told you this so that my joy may be in you and that your joy may be complete.

*12 My command is this: **Love each other as I have loved you.***

13 Greater love has no one than this, that he lay down his life for his friends.

14 You are my friends if you do what I command.

*16 You did not choose me, but I chose you and **appointed you to go and bear fruit** — fruit that will last. Then the Father will give you whatever you ask in my name.*

*17 This is my command: **Love each other.** NIV*

1 John 5:2-3

2 By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments.

*3 For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and **his commandments are not grievous.***

Sailing on the ships used to be more common than it is now since air travel has become so popular. One day a ship's surgeon, heard the overboard alarm sound. On the deck of the ship, he learned a young boy had fallen overboard. By the time he arrived, the crew had rescued the boy, stripped him of his outer garments, and had done everything they knew to do to revive him.

The crew shook their heads and said, "Doctor, it's no use, he's dead." Knowing they had probably done all they could, he turned to walk away. Then he felt a little urge to go back and examine the child. He turned around, pushed his way through the crowd, knelt down by the little boy and discovered it was **his own son**.

Four hours later, so tired he could hardly breathe from administering mouth-to-mouth resuscitation, from massaging the boy's heart, from working with him in every way possible; his son began to breathe. **What the program could not do, love accomplished. What the program could not revive, love revived.**

We can initially react the same way. We've prayed, we've fasted, we've passed out tracts, we've invited people to church, and we've done everything we know to do. But what will take us beyond our normal good works is the pure love of God flowing through our lives.

- **Human love has many limitations, but God's love has none.**

When we see a drug addict walking down the street, we shake our heads, and go home to sleep. When we hear about a tragedy, we say a little prayer and go home to sleep.

But if we kneel down and look into the face of our own child, we react differently. If we learn our child is on drugs, we will spend limitless dollars. We'll walk the streets at night, knock on doors asking, "Does anyone know anything about my son? Have you seen my daughter?" Spending time and money will not matter because we are looking for someone we love unconditionally. Where the program fails, love excels.

Do we love souls? Do we love a lost world? Can we go to sleep tonight and forget a lost world that doesn't know God? We know they are going to be lost unless they find Him.

If it is our parent or sibling who has a critical need, there is no limit to what we will do. But everyone on earth is someone's mother, father, sister or brother, and they will only be reached with love.

Human love allows us to love those who love us. God's pure love and compassion will not differentiate between a stranger and our loved one in need. Most of us have not achieved that dimension of love, therefore we must grow in charity which includes the two elements of compassion and care.

Loving the Brotherhood

A higher order than loving a lost world is the royal law working among the brotherhood. Above your love for a lost world, your love for a successful church, your love for your own ministry, there

is an order that is higher. Apostle Peter said, “**Above all things have fervent love among yourselves and above all things put on love.**” He discussed righteousness, holiness, and doctrine, but then he summarized that love was above all things.

Gal. 6:10

10 As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.

10 Especially to those of the household of faith [those who belong to God’s family with you, the believers]. AMP

1 Peter 1:22

*22 . . . **unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently.***

1 John 3:16, 18

*16 Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his Life for us and we ought to **lay down our lives for the brethren.***

*18 My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in **deed and in truth.***

1 Peter 2:17

*17 Honour all men. **Love the brotherhood.** Fear God. Honour the king.*

- **Revival is for the saint; evangelism is for the sinner.**
- **The effectiveness of our evangelism to reach the sinner is directly related to the revival of love among the brotherhood.**

The mission of an Apostolic church should be to reach our lost world through **evangelism**. But evangelism is effective only as there is a **revival** of love for one another in the church. Before **the love of God flows from us to a lost world, it must first flow among us**. Love brings unity which brings the power of God that provides healing and salvation for the sinner.

- **In the church there must be unity in essentials, tolerance in non-essentials, and charity in all things.**

We have not loved until we love our fellow Christian and our neighbor as ourselves. Only then will we have fulfilled the royal law.

While we should pray for our lost world, no Scriptures specifically require it. Jesus said, *“Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest to send forth laborers into the field.”* That’s not praying for the lost, that’s praying for the brotherhood -- laborers for the harvest field. When laborers are sent, the harvest will be reaped.

We are artists who must paint Christ to this world. The canvas of our lives is all of Christ that the lost will ever see. If we can depict a loving picture of Jesus, the world will be drawn to Him.

What is God? God is love. Every message and action of Jesus was based on love. He spoke messages of comfort and hope. He touched them, even those with leprosy. He ate with sinners.

So what kind of picture are we showing this world? What is reflected in our life? If a sinner wants to experience the love of God, they should be able to feel it flowing from our lives and see it in our actions -- as described in the song: **“Let The World See Jesus In Me.”**

Let the world see Jesus in me,
Let the world see Jesus in me.
Everywhere I go, I want the world to know,
Let the world see Jesus in me.⁴

The royal law of love must always be evident in our actions. Then the world will be drawn to the love of God.

Reaching for the Dove

In an old, Dutch picture a child is dropping a beautiful, expensive-looking toy out of one hand. But the other hand is outstretched --

reaching for a beautiful, white dove. The child has eyes only for the dove.

We Christians sometimes have too many toys and distractions in our lives. When these replace Christ as first place in our life, they become idols and the royal cord of charity begins to fade. They come in many forms as entertainment, hobbies, careers, ambitions, relationships, etc.

- As we reach for these things with one hand, our other hand begins to loosen its grip on the beautiful, white dove.
- As we reach for the beautiful, white dove, we will begin to loosen our grip on the toys -- temporal things.

2 Cor. 4:18

18 So we fix our eyes not on what is seen, but on what is unseen. For what is seen is temporary, but what is unseen is eternal. NIV

The greatest need of the church is to experience a fresh **revival of the royal law** where hindrances drop and we receive the dove -- the pure Spirit of God's love. When this happens, the pure love of God will flow through us and the royal rope of charity will reach our desperately lost world.

When there is a need and there are saints of God with pure charity and compassion flowing in their lives, an atmosphere is created for the supernatural gifts of the Spirit to work.

* * * * *

Twenty eight chapters are recorded in the book of Acts. Many other chapters have been added over the past 2,000 years. Today, the last chapters are being written. Will our names be recorded there?

7. Growing in Spiritual Gifts

As we continue in our spiritual growth, it is God's will for us to also grow in spiritual gifts. For the church to have the supernatural operating; there must be saints exercising spiritual gifts designed for an Apostolic church. The purpose of these gifts is to benefit the church and never to benefit or bring attention to an individual.

The purpose of this chapter is not to discuss the theology of spiritual gifts because entire books have been dedicated to this topic. One such expository is "Spiritual Gifts" by Rev. David K. Bernard.

Here we will summarize the need for Christians to exercise spiritual gifts as part of God's calling.

7.1 The Purpose of Miracles

The purpose for miracles in the ministry of Jesus was twofold:

- To provide healing and deliverance for physical needs.
- To cause people to hear His teaching and minister to their spiritual needs.

Some of the results of Jesus' miracles were that they:

- Attracted the attention of the multitudes.
- Reached the most people during His short three year ministry.

FUNDAMENTALS FOR GROWTH IN OUR PARTNERSHIP WITH GOD

- Increased awareness about their spiritual needs.
- Confirmed His teaching, affirming Him to be more than just another prophet.
- Inspired people to be converted from their traditions and believe in Jesus Christ.

These are a few of the many Scriptures demonstrating the results of the miracles of Jesus:

John 11:42, 43, 45

*42 But because of the people which stand by I said it, that **they may believe that thou hast sent me.***

43 And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

*45 Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, **believed on him.***

John 2:23

*23 Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, in the feast day, **many believed** in his name, when they saw the miracles which he did.*

John 7:31

*31 And **many of the people believed** on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this man hath done?*

John 4:45

*45 Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galilaeans **received him**, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast.*

Luke 5:15

*15 But so much the more went there a **fame abroad of him**: and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.*

Growing in Spiritual Gifts

John 6:22

*22 And a great multitude followed him, because they **saw his miracles** which he did on them that were diseased.*

Matt. 15:31

*31 **Insomuch that the multitude wondered**, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and **they glorified the God of Israel.***

Mark 7:37

*37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, **He hath done all things well**: he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.*

John 9:33

*33 **If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.***

Miracles in the First Century Church

After the disciples received the new birth experience on the Day of Pentecost, they continued Jesus' miracle ministry. Their first recorded miracle was the lame man at the temple gate. Whether ministered by Jesus or Peter and John, the lame man was miraculously healed. Miracles in the early church resulted in:

- Attracting the attention of multitudes.
- Reaching many people in a short time.
- Inspiring people to leave religious traditions and believe on Jesus.
- Confirming their teachings to be God's true plan.

The following are a few of the many Scriptures citing New Testament church miracles:

Acts 2:43

*43 **And fear came upon every soul**: and many wonders and signs were done by the apostles.*

Acts 3:10

10 And they knew that it was he which sat for alms at the Beautiful gate of the temple: and **they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him.**

Acts 6:8, 10

8 And Stephen, full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

10 And they **were not able to resist the wisdom and the spirit** by which he spake.

Acts 8:6

6 And the **people with one accord gave heed unto those things** which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

Acts 9:34-35

34 And Peter said unto him, Aeneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron saw him, and **turned to the Lord.**

Acts 9:40, 42

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down, and prayed; and turning him to the body said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes: and when she saw Peter, she sat up.

42 And it was known throughout all Joppa; **and many believed in the Lord.**

Acts 13:12

12 Then the deputy, when he saw what was done, **believed, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.**

Acts 14:11

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lifted up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, **The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men.**

Acts 19:17

17 And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified.

Mark 16:20

20 And they went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following.

Miracles in the Twenty-First Century Church

If Jesus, God in the flesh, needed miracles to launch, authenticate and advance His ministry, shouldn't the church today also? Likewise, if the New Testament church needed a miracle ministry, how much more should today's church need one to reach this godless generation

Miracles, signs and wonders should not be evident just within the church. But like the ministry of Jesus Christ and the first century church, they must be evident to our communities outside the church. This will spark and ignite the fires of evangelism and yield a great in-gathering of lost souls.

The church in the endtime must be restored to the Apostolic ministry with notable miracles, signs, and wonders for the same reasons that Jesus and the New Testament church needed them:

- Attract the multitudes.
- Expedite the Gospel message to the most people in the least time.
- Confirm that the Apostolic doctrine contains the true salvation plan.
- Inspire people to reject traditions, obey the truth and receive the new birth experience.

7.2 The Supernatural Gifts

Apostle Paul, in 1 Cor. 12:8-10, describes the nine gifts of the Spirit which produce the supernatural -- signs, wonders, and miracles. These nine gifts are categorized into three groups:

- Revelation (the knowing gifts).
- Power (the doing gifts).
- Inspiration (the speaking gifts).

-- From Spiritual Gifts

Revelation Gifts:

The **word of wisdom** is the supernatural gift of a portion of divine insight, judgment, or guidance for a particular need.

The **word of knowledge** is the supernatural gift of a portion of divine information for a particular need.

Discerning of spirits is the supernatural gift of perceiving the spiritual motivations for an action, or what type of spirit is at work.

Power Gifts:

The **gifts of healing** are various forms of supernatural cure or restoration from illnesses, diseases, injuries, and other impairments.

The **working of miracles** is the supernatural intervention of God that transcends the laws of nature in a situation and operates through or with a human vessel.

The **gift of faith** is the supernatural ability to trust God, or to inspire trust in God, for a particular need or circumstance.

Speaking Gifts:

Prophecy is the gift of a supernatural utterance directly from God in the language of the speaker and hearers.

The **gift of tongues** is the gift of a supernatural utterance in one or more languages unknown to the speaker.

The **interpretation of tongues** is the gift of a supernatural ability to translate or explain the meaning of a public utterance in tongues.

The Spirit grants supernatural gifts to the church for individuals to exercise, as He wills and works and as the need arises -- for times of special need or crisis. A person often exercises the same gift repeatedly, not because he owns it but because he can easily have faith for it again and again. Under this view, not everyone will exercise every gift, but each person can potentially exercise any gift. No gift is the exclusive possession of a select few. Emphasizing the corporate possession (*vs. the individual possession*) of the gifts helps us to avoid spiritual pride and encourages us to remain dependent upon each other and the Holy Spirit.¹

Jesus promised miracles, healing and authority over demons to **every believer**: “*And these signs will follow those who believe: In My name they will cast out devils . . . they will lay hands on the sick, and they will recover*” (Mark 16:17-18).

The Gifts of the Spirit Operate Through the Charity Channel

In the next chapter following his dissertation of the gifts of the Spirit, Apostle Paul describes how **charity** makes them operate. The Greek word for charity or love in this passage is *agape*, meaning divine love, selfless love, sacrificial love; love without expectation of return.

1 Cor. 12:31, 13:1-3, 13

*31 But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet shew I unto you **a more excellent way**.*

*1 Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not **charity**, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.*

*2 And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not **charity**, I am nothing.*

*3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not **charity**, it profiteth me nothing.*

*13 And now abideth faith, hope, **charity**, these three; but the **greatest of these is charity.***

Faith and hope reach for a vision of the future, but charity is the most important of the three because it operates in the present and into the future -- "*It will last forever*" (1 Cor. 13:8).

Those used of God in the gifts of the Spirit must be humble, compassionate and have a heart overflowing with **charity**. The gifts operate through the **charity channel** because God places His power in the hands of love. It is His will that we desire supernatural gifts, but our motives must be from a pure heart.

- **When saints of God have pure charity flowing in their lives, an atmosphere is created for the supernatural gifts of the Spirit to work.**

The characteristics of charity, described in 1 Cor. 13:4-8, are:

- Loyal
- Persevering
- Patient and kind
- Not irritable or touchy
- Does not hold grudges
- Never boastful or proud
- Never jealous or envious
- Is never glad about injustice
- Does not demand its own way
- Never haughty, selfish or rude
- Rejoices whenever truth wins out
- Hardly notices when others are wrong

- **To grow in the gifts of the Spirit, we must grow in charity.**

Refer to Chart G-8, “The Soul Winning Model”, in Appendix 1, which displays the flow of spiritual gifts through the charity channel.

7.3 Other Spiritual Gifts

Romans 12:6-8 discusses seven abilities that God gives to all believers. These are often referred to as the **service gifts**:

- Giving
- Leading
- Ministry
- Teaching
- Prophecy
- Exhortation
- Showing mercy

In the same text that describes these gifts, Apostle Paul is still emphasizing love:

Rom. 12:9-10

9 [Let your] love be sincere (a real thing); hate what is evil [loathe all ungodliness, turn in horror from wickedness], but hold fast to that which is good.

10 Love one another with brotherly affection [as members of one family], giving precedence and showing honor to one another.
AMP

-- From Spiritual Gifts

To some extent, every mature Christian should be able to function in these seven areas. All Christians are called to witness, to serve, to encourage, to give, and to show mercy. All should have some basic ability to instruct unbelievers in the plan of salvation and to lead new converts in the ways of the Lord. Each Christian has a particular gift, role, or function

in the church, or possibly several of them. Whatever God has given him to do, he should exercise it to his full capacity but always with humility.¹

The Ministerial Office Gifts (Five-fold Ministry)

In Ephesians 4:11-12, Apostle Paul identifies five special offices of leadership God has given to the church. These are most often referred to as the **five-fold ministry**:

- Apostles
- Prophets
- Evangelists
- Pastors
- Teachers

These defined ministries are held by preachers of the Gospel. Apostle Paul declares the purpose of the five-fold ministry is the same as the purposes for which God created man -- relationship and dominion.

1. **To perfect the saints**, through their **relationship** with God.
2. **To equip saints for the work of the ministry**. This is **dominion** exercised by the saints in completing the mission that Jesus exemplified for us in reaching a lost world.

-- From Spiritual Gifts

Every believer should have a ministry -- not necessarily a public preaching ministry but a specific place of service in the body of Christ. It is the task of the apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and teachers to help each saint find his work of ministry and train him to perform that task properly within the body.¹

The Book of Acts is Our Model for the Supernatural

The first message in Acts is salvation for the unconverted. But the second message in Acts, often overlooked, challenges saints. It describes their actions and how they achieved results. There was prayer, fasting, zeal, evangelism and miracles.

Growing in Spiritual Gifts

Acts 4:31

31 And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness.

Acts 5:14-16

14 And believers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women.

15 Insomuch that they brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by might overshadow some of them.

16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed every one.

What is the book of Acts? Is it a history of the early church or a current day instruction manual? This book has no end, like many New Testament books, because it was not meant to end. It was meant to go on and be repeated again and again until the end of time.

We can merely read history or we can write it. Those satisfied with how things are will be content to sit on the sidelines and watch history being recorded. Those who are hungrier for the supernatural move of the Spirit than for natural pleasures will pursue change and restoration of Apostolic ministry.

To achieve book of Acts results, there must be innovators whose **greatest joy and priority** is the Father's business. Acts contains 28 chapters; many others have been added over the past 2,000 years. In this 21st century, the last chapter is being recorded. Will our names appear in that chapter?

We have cracked open the door of evangelism and miracles from time to time and we thank God for it. These should build our faith for miracles outside the assembly; where the demonstration of the supernatural, evident in the early church, will attract the masses bringing healing and salvation.

To experience this, we must press with our prayers, fasting and actions of ministry until the doors of evangelism and miracles are blown wide open and the book of Acts power flows unrestricted to those hopelessly bound in prisons of sickness, sin and abuse.

IV.

Appendices

Appendix 1 - Charts

Only a few charts are included here since the Addendum Volume contains the full size 8.5 x 11 copies of the PowerPoint charts for Volumes I, II, III, IV and V. This is published as a separate volume since:

- Many of these charts become less useful (distorted and hard to read) when they are reduced to a book size.
- Many charts are applicable to multiple volumes.
- Charts can be revised and distributed without reprinting volumes that refer to them.

The full color charts are available on CD in PowerPoint and Adobe Acrobat formats.

Refer to the following pages for these charts:

- B-5 Restoration -- The History of the Nation of Israel and the Church
- C-6 New Levels of Relationship and Dominion -- Passion and Compassion
- C-11 Breakthrough to New Levels of Relationship and Dominion
- E-3 Levels of Prayer, Burden and Anointing
- F-1 The Path to the Supernatural Through the Core Ministry of the Church
- F-3 Path to the Supernatural -- "He Must Increase, but I Must Decrease"
- F-7 What Hinders the Supernatural -- Flow To Vs. Flow Through
- F-8 The Astronomical Size of the Universe Reflects a Supernatural God
- F-9 The Perfect Timing and Movement of the Universe Reflects a Supernatural God
- F-10 Encounter and Engagement Releases Supernatural Power
- G-6 Burden + Prayer + Care = Miracles
- G-8 The Soul Winning Model
- G-23 Ministering to Natural Needs and Spiritual Needs
- G-24 Soul Winning and Spiritual Maturity Cycle
- G-26 Love -- Definition (Compassion and Care)

APPENDICES

Chart B-5

RESTORATION - THE HISTORY OF THE CHURCH

It is God's will for history to repeat itself – for us to go back (full circle) to the original pattern of the first church in the Book of Acts!

"The glory of this latter house shall be greater than the former"

1. JESUS' MIRACLE MINISTRY

- Created the Blueprint and Foundation for the Church

2. BOOK OF ACTS

FIRST CENTURY CHURCH

- Continued the Ministry of Jesus
- Ablaze with Evangelism, Miracles, Signs and Wonders

3. PERSECUTION FROM WITHOUT SPREADS THE GOSPEL

4. THE DECLINE OF THE CHURCH FALSE DOCTRINE INTRODUCED (The Devil's Plan to Destroy the Church from Within!)

**5. 500 – 1500 AD
THE DARK AGES**

**OUR VISION:
RESTORATION OF THE
CHURCH PROPHESED
FOR THE LAST DAYS**

8. Today

- 7. - Azusa Street 1906**
- Topeka, Kansas 1901**

6. REFORMATION (1500s)

- Charles Spurgeon
- Charles Finney
- John Calvin
- Jonathan Edwards
- Martin Luther

The church has tracked the nation of Israel throughout history.

OUR CHOICE – Today at the beginning of the 3rd Millennium:

8. TAKE A SHORT CUT? – Be part of the falling away (II Thess. 2:3)
(Deception - The devil's plan to destroy the Church from within).

9. PAY THE PRICE FOR RESTORATION? (A Deeper Relationship with Him)
We must not look at Restoration as a heaven or hell issue for us:
It is a heaven or hell issue for our Harvest Field! If we fall short of
Restoration, there will be many SOULS that will be LOST!

Chart C-6

THE PATH TO SPIRITUAL MATURITY AND THE SUPERNATURAL

The Spiritual Growth Process

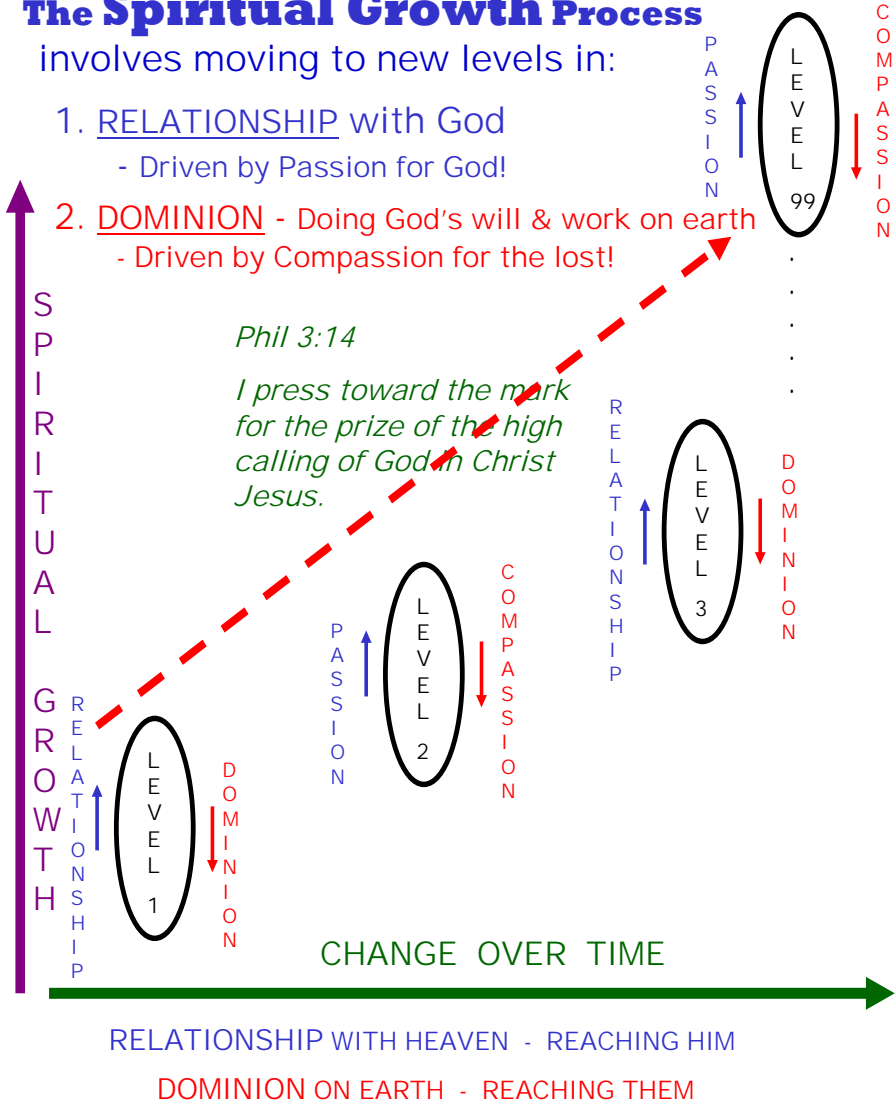
involves moving to new levels in:

1. RELATIONSHIP with God

- Driven by Passion for God!

2. DOMINION - Doing God's will & work on earth

- Driven by Compassion for the lost!



APPENDICES

Chart C-11

BREAK-THROUGH TO NEW LEVELS OF:

- RELATIONSHIP with God
- DOMINION - Partnering with God to fulfill His mission and His will and work on earth

GOD'S ETERNAL
PURPOSE & WILL
FOR OUR LIFE

DRIVEN BY A GREAT HUNGER & DESIRE FOR GOD

CHANGE

Break-through Change
The Harvest Driven Christian
From Glory to Glory

GRADUAL CHANGE

THE MAINTENANCE DRIVEN CHRISTIAN

SALVATION
IS ONLY THE
BEGINNING &
FOUNDATION

TIME (OUR CHRISTIAN WALK)

" Changed into His image from Glory to Glory by the Spirit of God "

" Partakers of His Divine Nature "

Chart E-3

LEVELS OF BURDEN, PRAYER & ANOINTING		
LEVELS OF BURDEN (VISION)	LEVELS OF PRAYER	LEVELS OF ANOINTING (DIVINE ABILITY)
0. NO BURDEN / VISION (MY KINGDOM)	0. PRAYERLESSNESS	0. NO ANOINTING
1. BURDEN FOR SELF (PERSONAL) (MY / HIS KINGDOM)	1. SURVIVAL PRAYER - SEEKING THE HANDS OF GOD - MAINTENANCE PRAYER (Maintaining Our Own Salvation)	1. PERSONAL ANOINTING BEGINS HERE
2. BURDEN FOR OTHERS (HIS KINGDOM)	2. REVIVAL PRAYER - SEEKING THE FACE OF GOD (Favor & Relationship) - RELATIONSHIP PRAYER - TRANSFORMATION PRAYER - DOMINION PRAYER	2. PUBLIC ANOINTING SOUL WINNING MINISTRY BEGINS & INCREASES HERE
3. BURDEN OF THE LORD (Restoration of the Church to the book of Acts & beyond) (HIS KINGDOM)	3. REVIVAL PRAYER - SEEKING THE HEART OF GOD (Consumed with His Purpose) - RELATIONSHIP PRAYER - TRANSFORMATION PRAYER - DOMINION PRAYER	3. PRIESTLY ANOINTING (DOUBLE PORTION) - INTENSE SOUL WINNING CONCERN & MINISTRY - USED IN THE GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT

Note: The above is a draft model to be used for teaching prayer and related concepts.
The horizontal lines in the above table are not meant to depict a precise concept.

APPENDICES

Chart F-1

THE PATH TO DOMINION IN THE SUPERNATURAL

Through the Core Ministry of the Church

The Only Hope For Reaching This Lost End-time Generation



PASSION BRINGS POWER

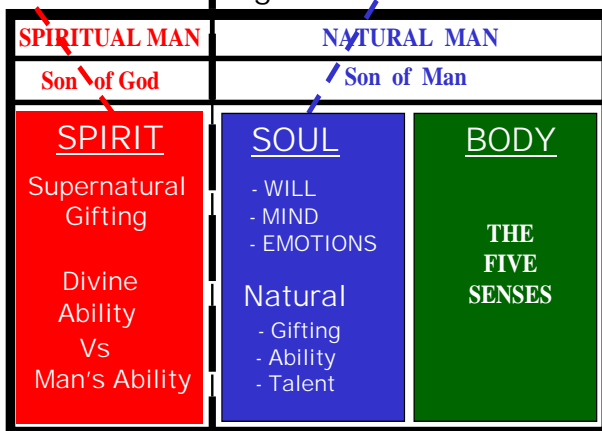
God's eternal purpose and will for every born-again believer is to fulfill the great commission to work in His harvest field reaching lost souls.

This is a SPIRITUAL WORK and will not be done with natural talents and giftings. This will almost always be against the natural man's desires, abilities and comfort zone.

This will always involve:

- His Will Vs Our Will (Not Our Choice but His)
- His Thinking Vs Our Thinking (His ways)
- His Emotions Vs Our Emotions (Deep sorrow for their suffering with a strong urge to help)

Born Again Believer



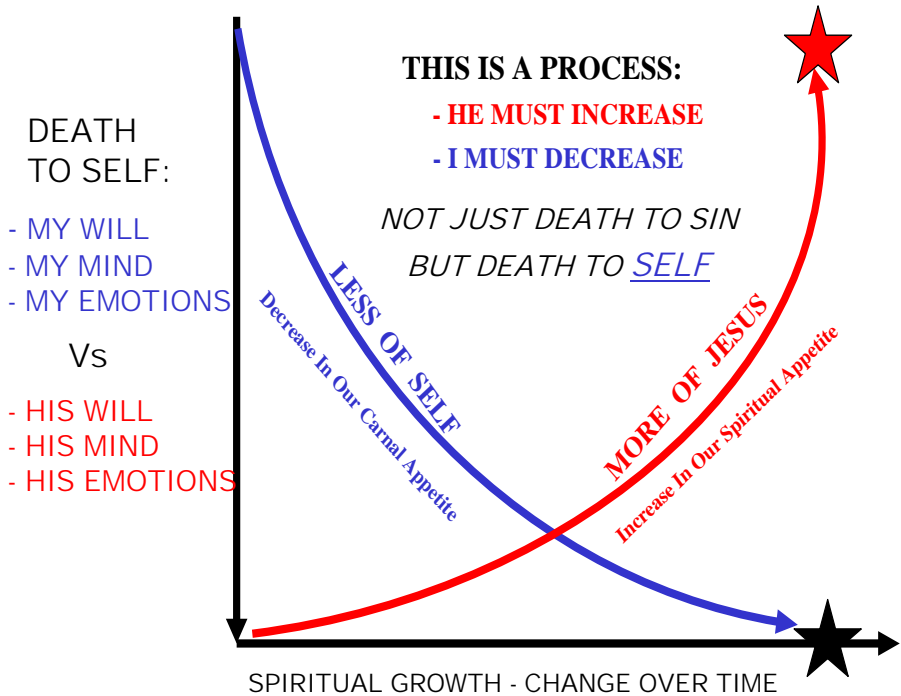
Power

Zech 4:6-7 You will not succeed by your own strength, but by my Spirit. Obstacles as great as mountains will disappear before you. TEV

Chart F-3

THE PATH TO THE SUPERNATURAL FOR THE BORN-AGAIN BELIEVER

THE MIRACLE MINISTRY OF JESUS WILL FLOW THROUGH
US UNRESTRICTED - WHEN SELF HAS COMPLETELY DIED

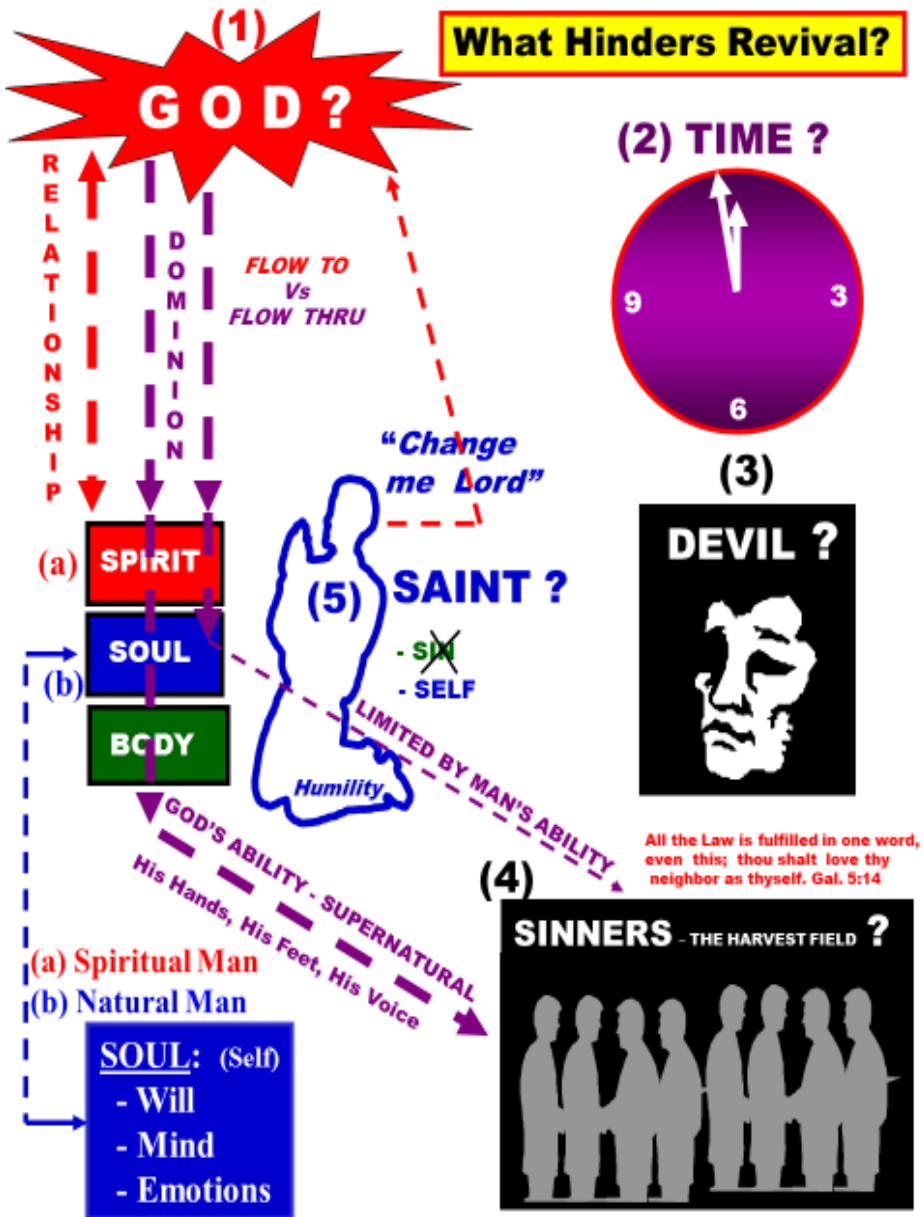


IN THE NEW TESTAMENT: (Why did John the Baptist have to die?)
John the Baptist was the forerunner of Jesus' miracle ministry. His message of **"He must increase, but I must decrease"**, was a self-fulfilled prophecy when he was imprisoned, and put to death as the miracle ministry of Jesus began.

IN THE OLD TESTAMENT: (Why did Jonathan have to die?)
Saul is a type of the flesh, Jonathan is a type of the soul (self - the will, the mind, and the emotions), David is a type of the Spirit. Both Saul and Jonathan had to die before David could come to the throne.

APPENDICES

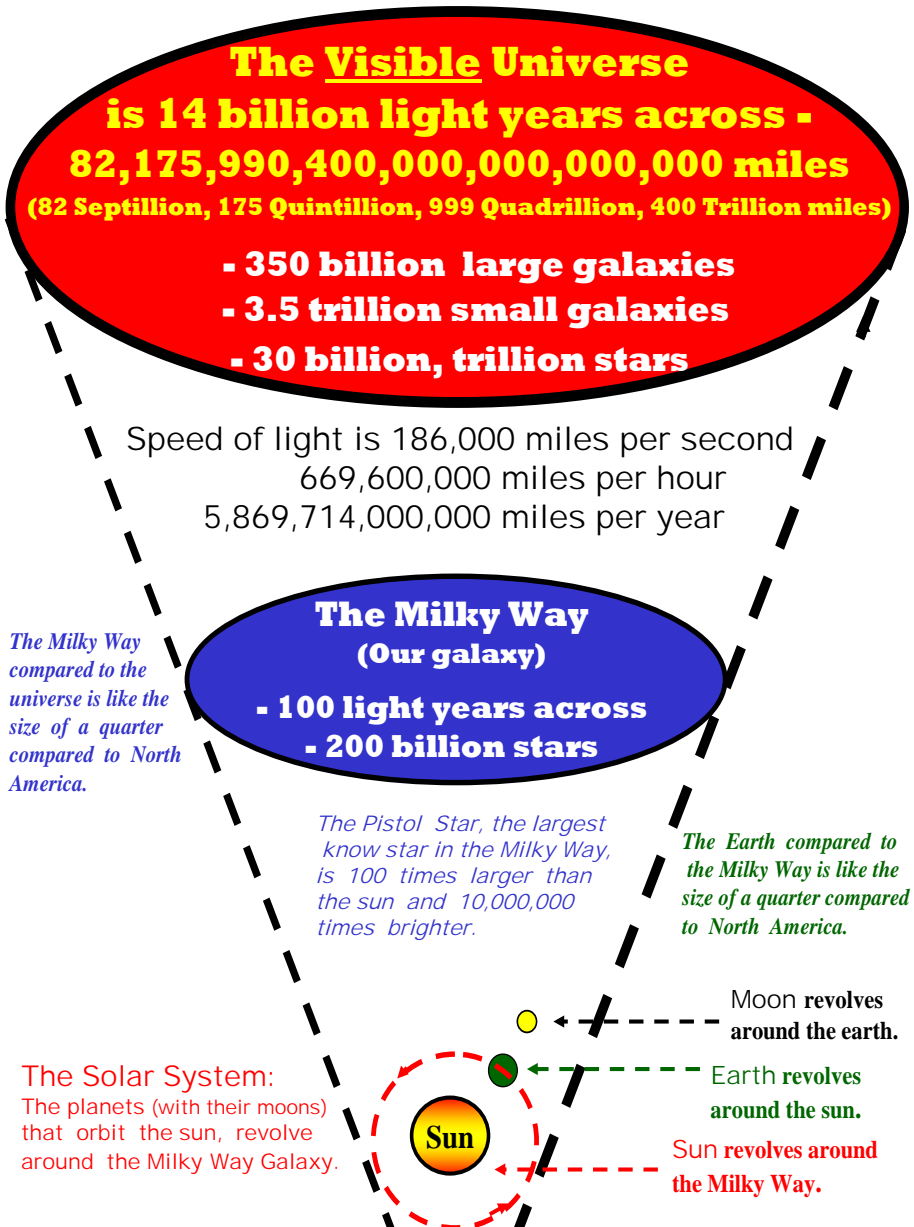
Chart F-7



The Greatest Hindrance to Revival is Lack of Dominion Over Self (relying on our natural talents Vs. the Spirit).

Chart F-8

The Astronomical Size of the Universe Reflects the Awesome Greatness of Our Supernatural God

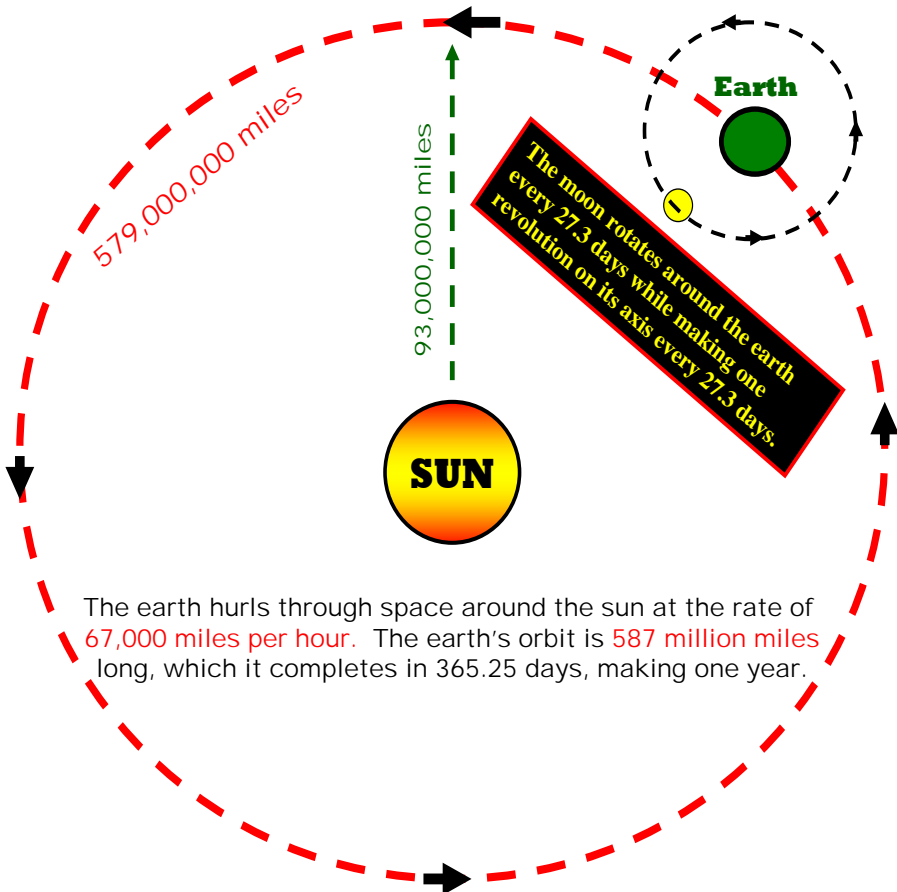


APPENDICES

Chart F-9

The Perfection in the Timing and Movement of the Universe (with its Galaxies, Solar Systems, and Planets) Reflect the Wisdom, Power, Perfection and Excellence of Our Supernatural God

The earth rotates 1,100 miles per hour and completes one revolution of 27,000 miles to make one 24 hour day.

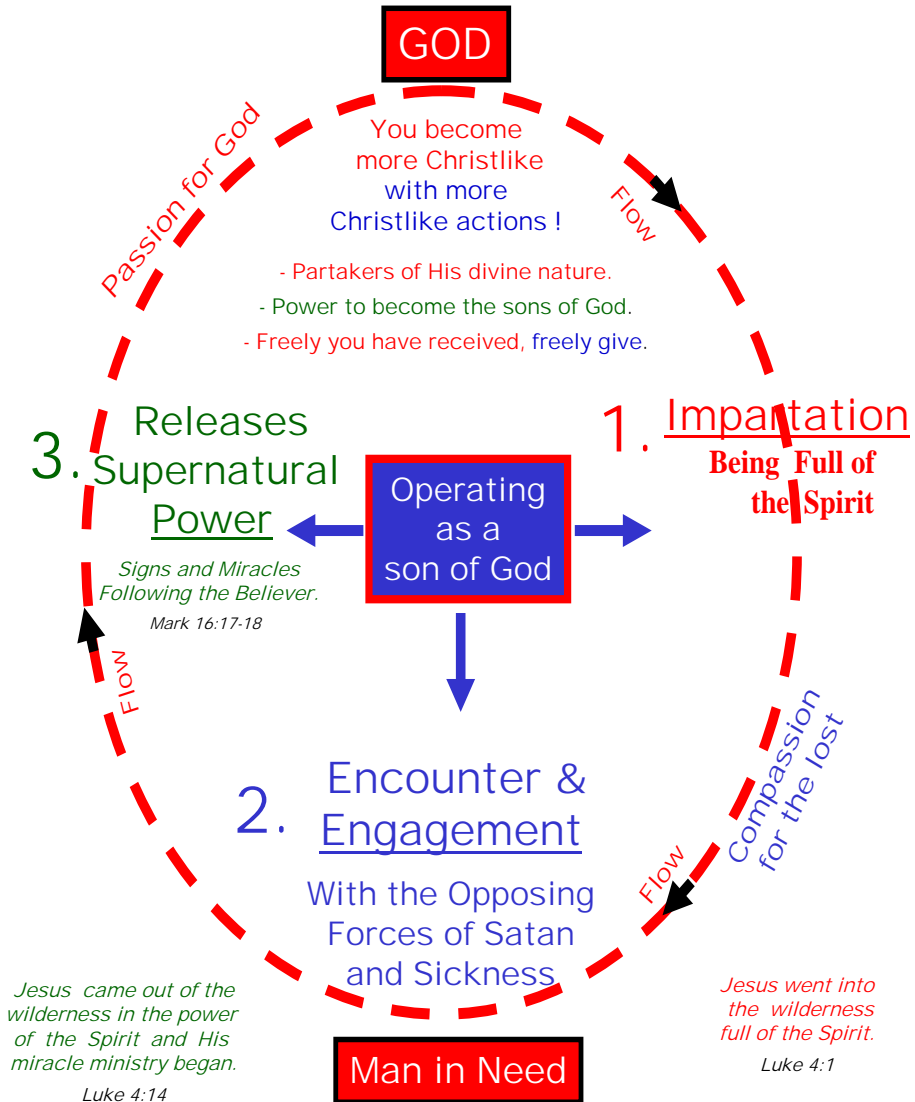


The earth hurls through space around the sun at the rate of **67,000 miles per hour**. The earth's orbit is **587 million miles** long, which it completes in 365.25 days, making one year.

The sun is circling in the Milky Way Galaxy at the rate of 486,000 miles per hour. For the earth to stay in its fixed orbit around the sun, it must move in a third dimension at the same speed - in effect chasing the sun. The sun revolves around the Milky Way galaxy about once every 250 million years.

Chart F-10

Encounter and Engagement with the
Opposing Forces of Satan and Sickness
Releases the Power of the Spirit !



Ministering to someone in need benefits them - and in turn benefits you.

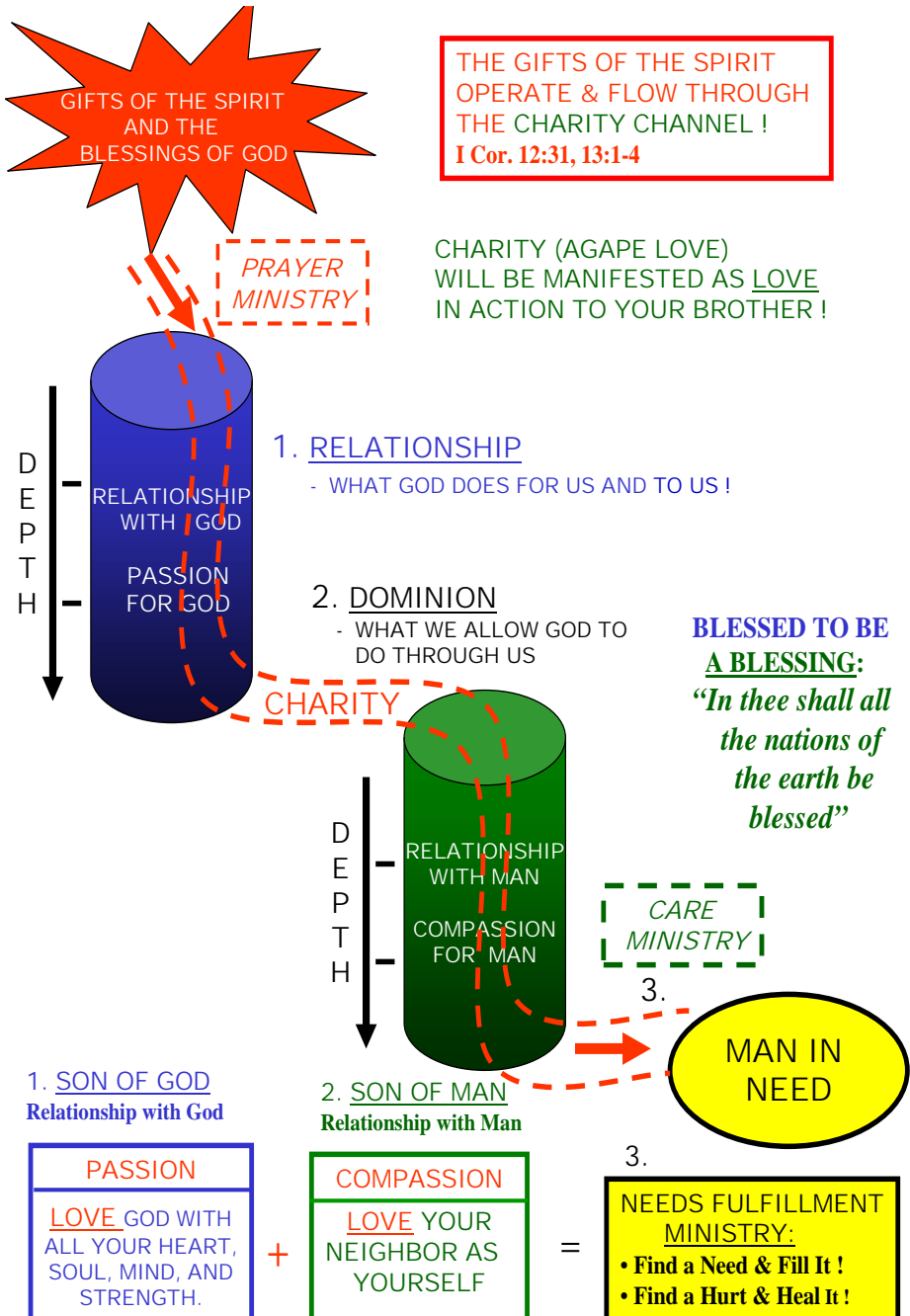
APPENDICES

Chart G-6



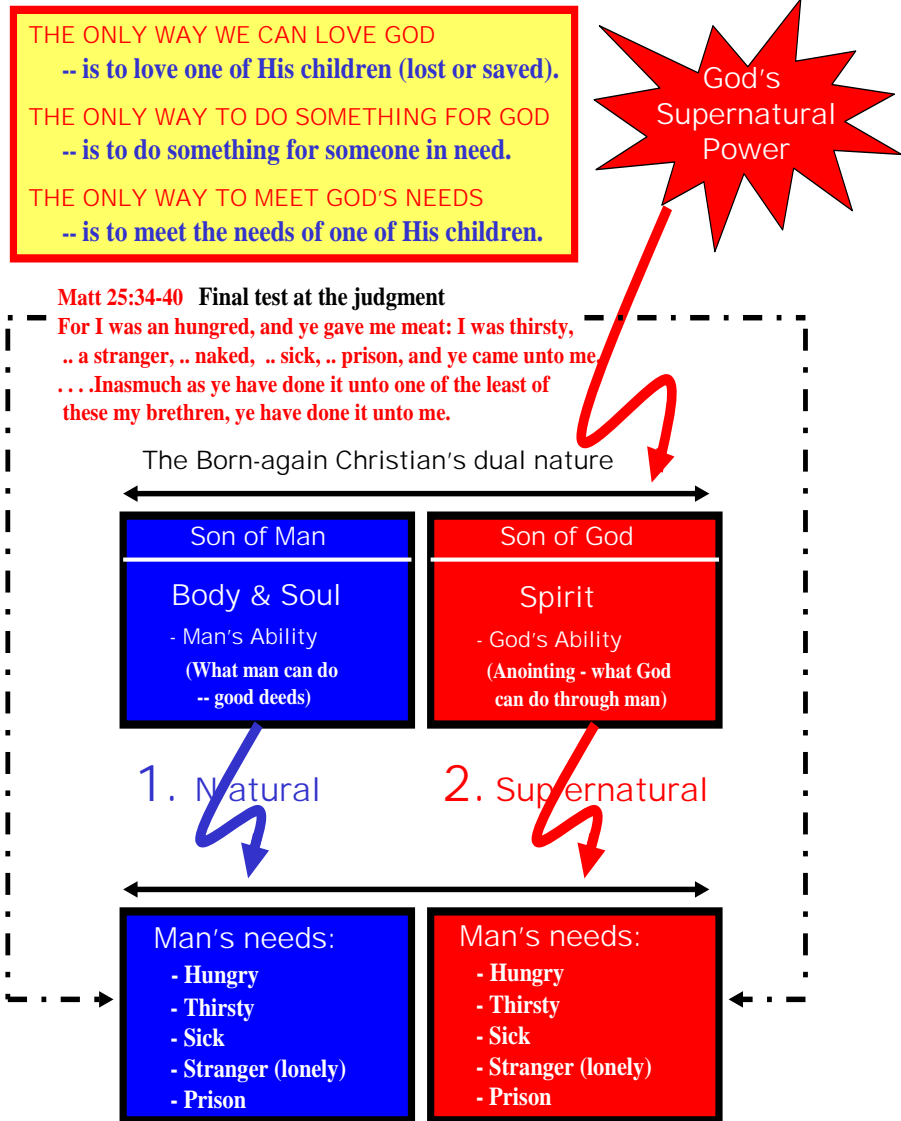
WHEN THE **SOLUTION** MEETS THE **NEED** A MIRACLE OCCURS !

Chart G-8



APPENDICES

Chart G-23

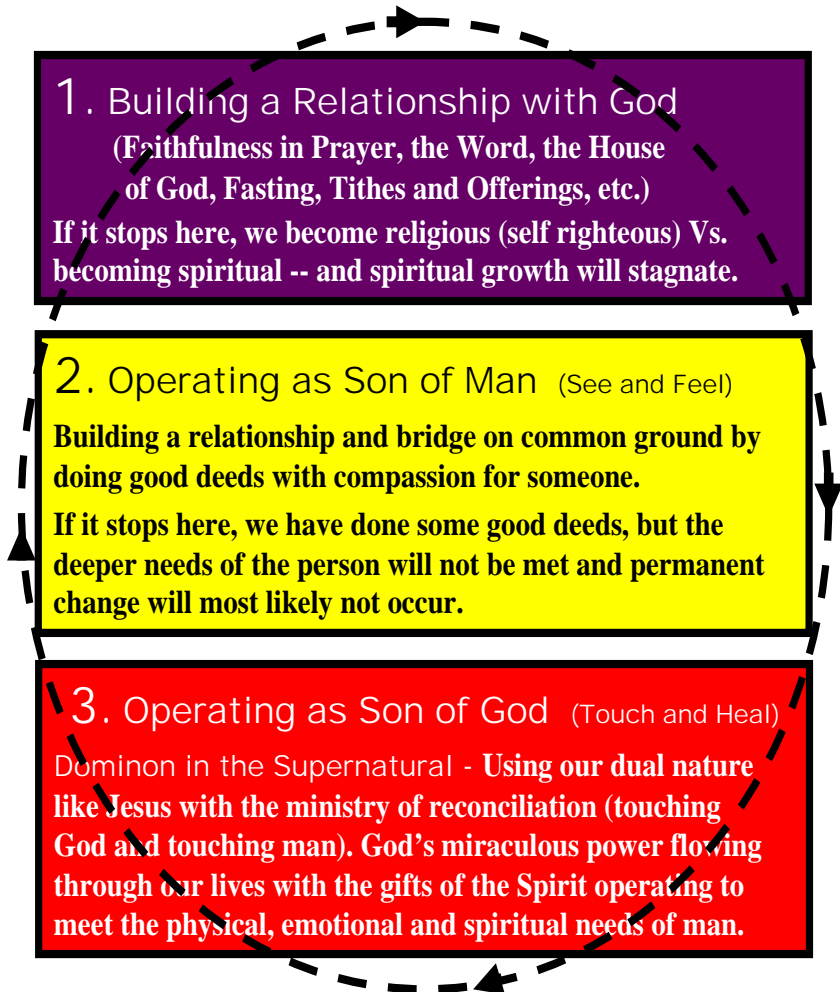


- (1) **Building a relationship with someone in need by doing kind deeds, as a son of man. These good deeds (what we can do) begin to open up the channel of God's love and compassion in our lives for the second step.**
- (2) **God's supernatural power -- what God can do through us, as a son of God, to minister to their needs.**

Chart G-24

THE SOUL WINNING AND SPIRITUAL MATURITY CYCLE

(Fulfilling God's Will and Purpose)



Soul winning is a spiritual process and will only be successful and have lasting results as we operate in the **Spirit**. To operate at this level the first two processes are foundational and cannot be bypassed. You cannot have compassion on someone that you cannot see and touch. As we complete this cycle over and over again, true and lasting **spiritual growth** of the born-again Christian occurs.

APPENDICES

Chart G-26

L O V E

Intense deep devotion for someone or something.

Love in its purest form would drive someone to give their life for a cause or a person.

Love is inconveniencing yourself for someone's benefit.

Love will drive you to sacrifice your time, energy and finances for someone in need.

**LOVE WILL ALWAYS HAVE TWO COMPONENTS:
"COMPASSION & CARE"**

Compassion is the Emotion -

It is the deep sorrow and sympathy for the suffering or trouble of others accompanied by a strong urge to help.

Care is the Action -

It means to provide for or protect against trouble and want. It is feeling a great responsibility and concern for the welfare of someone to the extent that action will be taken to do something to affect their welfare and comfort.

Jesus came to earth to:

- See and Feel (Compassion)
- Touch and Heal (Care)

Appendix 2 - Addendum Volume Chart Reference

Refer to the Addendum Volume for the charts related to the following subjects:

Primary Subject Index for:

“Dominion - Doing God’s Will and Work”

“Restoration of Apostolic Ministry and Authority”

- B-1 Dominion in the Supernatural
- B-1a Dominion in the Supernatural (Continuous Cycle)
- B-1b Dominion in the Supernatural (Seven Process Cycle)
- B-2 Relationship and Dominion -- Spiritual Growth
- B-3 God Seeks for Worshippers and Intercessors
- B-4 God’s Plan for Restoration
- B-5 Restoration -- The History of the Nation of Israel and the Church
- B-6 Restoration -- Vision
- B-7 Relationship, Revelation, Restoration and Revival
- B-8 Restoration Theme
- B-9 Less of Self -- More of Him

APPENDICES

Primary Subject Index for: “The Path to the Supernatural”

- F-1 The Path to the Supernatural Through the Core Ministry of the Church
- F-2 The Supernatural -- Cycles of Passion and Compassion
- F-3 Path to the Supernatural -- “He Must Increase, but I Must Decrease”
- F-4 Leading the Inner Circle Into the Supernatural
- F-5 Gifts of the Spirit Flow Through the Love and Compassion Channel
- F-6 Gifts of the Spirit Flow Through the Charity Channel
- F-7 What Hinders the Supernatural -- Flow To Vs. Flow Through
- F-8 The Astronomical Size of the Universe Reflects a Supernatural God
- F-9 The Perfect Timing and Movement of the Universe Reflects a Supernatural God
- F-10 Encounter and Engagement Releases Supernatural Power

Alternate Subject Index for:

“Dominion - Doing God’s Will and Work”

“Restoration of Apostolic Ministry and Authority”

- A-1 A Balanced Relationship with God
- A-9 Relationship -- Flow Through
- A-10 The Two Major Themes of the Bible -- Relationship and Dominion (Part 1)
- A-10a The Two Major Themes of the Bible -- Relationship and Dominion (Part 2)
- A-11 Relationship and Dominion Definitions
- C-5 Expanding Our Relationship and Dominion Role
- C-6 New Levels of Relationship and Dominion - Passion and Compassion
- C-7 Rending of the Veil -- Less of Self and More of God
- C-11 Breakthrough to New Levels of Relationship and Dominion
- C-13 Anointing (Divine Ability)
- E-2 Revival Prayer Vs. Survival Prayer
- E-4 Prayer and Soul Winning
- F-1 The Path to the Supernatural Through the Core Ministry of the Church
- F-2 The Supernatural -- Cycles of Passion and Compassion
- F-7 What Hinders the Supernatural -- Flow To Vs. Flow Through
- G-4 The Two Arms of the Church
- G-5 Led By the Spirit Into the Harvest Field
- G-10 Passion and Compassion is the Path to Dominion
- G-11 Partnership with God
- G-23 Ministering to Natural Needs and Spiritual Needs

APPENDICES

Alternate Subject Index for: “The Path to the Supernatural”

- B-1 Restoration of Dominion Model
- B-1a Dominion in the Supernatural (Continuous Cycle)
- B-1b Dominion in the Supernatural (Seven Step Cycle)
- B-9 Less of Self - More of Him
- C-6 New Levels of Relationship and Dominion -- Passion and Compassion
- C-7 Rending of the Veil -- Less of Self and More of God
- C-14 Moving from a Maintenance Driven Christian to a Harvest Driven Christian
- G-10 Passion and Compassion is the Path to Dominion

Appendix 3 - Notes

Introduction

- (1) The Pulpit Commentary, Electronic Database, Copyright © 2001, 2003 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.

Section I

Chapter 1

- (1) Radio Astronomers Measure Sun's Orbit Around Milky Way, Paul Recer, Associated Press *June 01, 1999*.

Chapter 3

- (1) Adam Clarke's Commentary, Electronic Database, Copyright © 1996, 2003, 2005, 2006 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.
- (2) Matthew Henry's Commentary on the Whole Bible, PC Study Bible Formatted Electronic Database, Copyright © 2006 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.

Chapter 4

Note: Some of the concepts used in the section of this chapter entitled, "Fading of the Outer Man" are from a sermon preached by Rev. Charles Carrin.

Section II

Chapter 1

- (1) Search for Truth #2 Home Bible Study, © 2003 Word Aflame Press, Hazelwood, MO 63042-2299, p. 35. All rights reserved.

Chapter 2

- (1) Matthew Henry's Commentary on the Whole Bible, PC Study Bible Formatted Electronic Database, Copyright ©

APPENDICES

2006 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.

- (2) Barnes' Notes, Electronic Database, Copyright © 1997, 2003, 2005, 2006 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.

Chapter 3

Note: Some of the concepts in this chapter are from a sermon preached by Rev. Mark Morgan.

Chapter 4

- (1) 100Prophecies.org, www.konig.org.
- (2) Search for Truth #2 Home Bible Study, © 2003 Word Aflame Press, Hazelwood, MO 63042-2299, p. 264, 265. All rights reserved.
- (3) Barnes' Notes, Electronic Database, Copyright © 1997, 2003, 2005, 2006 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.
- (4) Author Unknown.

Section III

Chapter 1

- (1) Matthew Henry's Commentary on the Whole Bible, PC Study Bible Formatted Electronic Database, Copyright © 2006 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.
- (2) The Biblical Illustrator, Electronic Database, Copyright © 2002, 2003, 2006 Ages Software, Inc. and Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.

Chapter 2

- (1) Matthew Henry's Commentary on the Whole Bible, PC Study Bible Formatted Electronic Database, Copyright © 2006 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.
- (2) Jamieson, Fausset, and Brown Commentary, Electronic

Appendix 3 - Notes

Database, Copyright © 1997, 2003, 2005, 2006 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.

- (3) “How to Know the Will of God”, by Author Unknown, notes from Rev. Kelsey Griffin, Texas Bible College instructor.
- (4) www.unification.net/ws/theme128.htm, World Scripture -- Humility.
- (5) Spirit of Prayer, Part II, p.73, Edition of Moreton, Canterbury, 1893.

Chapter 3

- (1) The Pulpit Commentary, Electronic Database, Copyright © 2001, 2003 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.

Chapter 4

- (1) Merrane-Webster Dictionary Online.
- (2) YourDictionary.com.
- (3) Mount Moriah by Lambert Dolphin, Web Page:<http://ldolphin.org/>, April 8, 1996.
- (4) Author Unknown, Song: *I Will Give You All*.
- (5) E. M. Bounds on Prayer, (Whitaker House, 1997), p. 533.
- (6) Adam Clarke’s Commentary, Electronic Database, Copyright © 1996, 2003, 2005, 2006 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.
- (7) James F. Balch, M.D., Phyllis A. Balch, C.N.C., *Prescription for Nutritional Healing*, Second Edition, p. 548, copyright information unknown.

Chapter 5

- (1) The Biblical Illustrator, Electronic Database, Copyright © 2002, 2003, 2006 Ages Software, Inc. and Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.

APPENDICES

- (2) Ray Boltz, Song: *Shepherd Boy*, copyright information unknown.
- (3) Prophecies of King David, www.orthodoxphotos.com.
- (4) The American Heritage Dictionary of the English Language: Fourth Edition, 2000, On-line.
- (5) Merriam-Webster Dictionary On-line.
- (6) Tabernacle of David, www.watchman.ministries.org.
- (7) Barnes' Notes, Electronic Database, Copyright © 1997, 2003, 2005, 2006 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.

Chapter 6

- (1) Jamieson, Fausset, and Brown Commentary, Electronic Database, Copyright © 1997, 2003, 2005, 2006 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.
- (2) Adam Clarke's Commentary, Electronic Database, Copyright © 1996, 2003, 2005, 2006 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.
- (3) Matthew Henry's Commentary on the Whole Bible, PC Study Bible Formatted Electronic Database, Copyright © 2006 by Biblesoft, Inc. All rights reserved.
- (4) Author Unknown, Song: *Let The World See Jesus In Me*.

Note: Some of the concepts used in the section of this chapter entitled, "The Royal Law" are from a sermon preached by Rev. D. Davis.

Chapter 7

- (1) David K. Bernard, *Spiritual Gifts*, ©1997 David K. Bernard, Hazelwood, MO 63042-2299, p, 20, 21, 26, 84, 104, 109, 115, 124, 129, 138, 185, 196, 204.

Appendix 4 – About the Author

The author's background includes four different areas of experience:

(1) Working thirty-three years in the challenging and exciting field of computer technology, serving both as a technologist and a manager, witnessing and experiencing almost unbelievable accomplishments and advancements.



(2) Working 50 years in various ministries in three home churches, serving at the individual and leadership levels: Home Bible Study and Discipleship Ministry (40 years), Sunday School Bus Ministry (10) Years, Sunday School Ministry, Compassion and Care Ministry, Home Fellowship Ministry, Youth Ministry, Visitor Follow-up Ministry, Nursing Home Ministry, Singles Ministry, Alcohol / Drug Abuse Mentoring Ministry and Prison Ministry.

(3) Researching, writing and publishing nine books.

(4) Preaching and teaching in many churches in the U.S., foreign missions churches and Bible schools (ordained minister with the United Pentecostal Church International; associated minister with UPCI Global Missions approved for foreign missions support assignments).

His ministry emphasis includes revival and spiritual growth of the saint for the purpose of more effective evangelism of a lost world. Some of the key ministry themes include:

Ministry Information

- Relationship with God (impartation from the Father).
- Spiritual Growth (continuous transformation).
- Dominion (engagement in the Father's business with dominion over satan and sickness).
- God's perfect love growing and flowing in our lives.
- Urgency of the Father's business (managing our priorities consistent with our knowledge of the times).

Ministry Venues:

Global Missions (particularly Bible schools)

We have spent several months teaching in Bible schools in: Manila, Philippines; Barcelona, Spain; and Madrid, Spain. We plan to continue this ministry in the future.

Home Missions

(Pioneer works and small churches that are not self-supporting)

Every year a portion of our time is dedicated to this area. This is done on a volunteer basis with no expense to the pastor or the church.

Established Churches

Special Services and Seminars

When needed, special services and seminars provide preaching, teaching and training for putting practical revival and evangelism principles into practice. Some of these services and seminars, summarized on the following page, apply to the entire church and some to selected groups in the church. Multimedia is used in the teaching and training presentations.

Special Services and Seminars

(1) Deeper Life Ministry

(Doctrine – preaching and teaching the Word, three levels)

- New Converts: Discipleship curriculum and classes.
- Entire Church: Teaching and preaching regarding the commitment and actions required to pursue spiritual maturity -- becoming a partaker of His divine nature.
- Inner Circle: Jesus modeled this special ministry by choosing a small inner circle of three out of the twelve disciples (Peter, James and John) whom He taught, prayed with and worked with separate from the other nine disciples. Jesus recognized that these were ready to move further into the supernatural and He accommodated that (e.g. Mount of Transfiguration, raising the dead, Gethsemane).

**Promote the pursuit of a greater hunger
and reverence for the Word of God!**

(2) Compassion and Care Ministry

(Actions – fellowship and ministering to needs)

- Planning and developing a more organized and effective Compassion and Care Ministry (Attracting, Winning, Retaining and making disciples).
- Teaching and training for a greater number of the laity to get involved in this ministry.
- Reaching sinners in our circle of influence (operating as both son of man and son of God).
- Caring for visitors and new converts (turning church greeters into caregivers):

Find a need and fill it! Find a hurt and heal it!

Special Services and Seminars

(3) Prayer Ministry

(Power – corporate and private prayer)

- Planning and developing a more organized and powerful Prayer Ministry in the church.
- Involving a greater number of the laity in this ministry.
- Teaching and training regarding the development of a more balanced and effective prayer life (for children, new converts, and others struggling with their prayer life).

(4) Church Growth Vision and Planning (Direction)

- Vision casting and planning to elevate and improve the organization structures and processes for the three key ministries of the church: Deeper Life Ministry (doctrine arm), Compassion and Care Ministry (actions arm), Prayer Ministry (power arm).
- Planning and preparation to reap and retain a greater harvest by mobilizing a greater number of trained laborers in the harvest.

Book of Acts Church Growth Foundational Principles

(1) Doctrine (2) Fellowship / Breaking Bread (3) Prayers

*Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls. And they continued stedfastly in the **apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.** And the Lord **added to the church daily** such as should be saved. (Acts 2:41-43, 47)*

Ministry Information

Contact Information

Telephone: (281) 773-6534

Email: jtwentier@peoplepc.com

Websites: My-Fathers-Business.net (English)

Negocios-De-Me-Padre.net (Español)

Home Church: Greater Life Church, Webster, TX

Pastor: Rev. Mark Hughes

